This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

MEMOIRS OF PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

REX ET IMPERATOR DE JURE

The
University of California
Library

H. Morse Stephens

University of California

MEMOIRS OF

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Photograph by Pach Bros., New York

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

The direct legitimate lineal successor to the late
King Edward VII

THE MEMOIRS

OF

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

REX ET IMPERATOR DE JURE

OF

Great Britain and Ireland

With Introduction and Many Photographs

NEW YORK
B. W. DODGE & COMPANY
1910

THE MEMOIRS

OF

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

REX ET IMPERATOR DE JURE

OF

Great Britain and Ireland

With Introduction and Many Photographs

NEW YORK
B. W. DODGE & COMPANY
1910

G1A2

COPYRIGHT, 1910, BY
WILLIAM RICKEY.

Registered at Stationers' Hall, London.

(*All Rights Reserved*)

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

HENRY MORSE STEPHENS

PRESS OF WILLIAM G. HEWITT, BROOKLYN, N. Y.

Dedication

TO MY BELOVED MOTHER

To the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, to the people of the Colonies and British Possessions beyond the Seas, to the people of my beloved India, and to the people of the United States of America (whose hospitality and friendship I have enjoyed for the past twelve years), this book is dedicated in the name of the Most High—the King of Kings.

Ekam eva advitîyam.

509912

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

Direct Lineal Succession and Royal Titles of John II Rex et Imperator de Jure of Great Britain and Ireland and of the Empire of India.....*Page 1*

CHAPTER II

Casper Hauser Redivius—not quite—Comparing the Early Fate of John De Guelph with that of the Famous Foundling. *Page 19*

CHAPTER III

Marriage of the first Princess Consort to H. R. H., the Prince of Wales—Facts About the Marriage—The Place of Meeting of the Prince of Wales as a Young Man.....*Page 24*

CHAPTER IV

The Royal Family Council at Buckingham Palace—The News of the Prince's Marriage has reached the Queen—Plotting at the Family Council.....*Page 30*

CHAPTER V

The Royal Tiff—Lively Scene in the Queen's Closet—The Queen wants to Manage the "Affair" all by herself and the Prince Consort objects—Details of the plot hatched by the Queen—The Marriage to Princess Alexandra.....*Page 35*

CHAPTER VI

Early Impressions.....*Page 40*

CHAPTER VII

Earliest Recollections—I snub my Grandmother, the Queen—I declare a "Holy War".....*Page 49*

CHAPTER VIII

A Pathetic Meeting—Fruits of Scarlet Sin of Royal Court visited on Second and Third Generations—Why King Solomon was Favored of God.....*Page 60*

CHAPTER IX

A series of Amusing and Painful Incidents—I remove to Lichfield, Staffordshire.....*Page 70*

CHAPTER X

Chafing under the Injustice of my Disinheritance and Restraint in my False Position I throw off my Yoke and go into the World—a Man among Men.....*Page 84*

CHAPTER XI

I enlist in the Bedfordshire Regiment stationed in Ireland—Amusing Incidents with Irish People—I refuse Promotion to become better Acquainted with the Soldier's Life....*Page 100*

CHAPTER XII

Amusing stories of a Soldier's Life in Ireland—With Col. Hillier on Spike Island—Outbreak of Convicts—I play the rôle of Commander of Cork Harbor.....*Page 111*

CHAPTER XIII

Spike Island University of Experience—The Sorrows of Ireland Portrayed in Chains—Inhuman Evictions, Starvation, Pestilence, and Death—My soul Stirred with Pity, I take up the Burden of my Mother's Ancestral Home.....*Page 122*

CHAPTER XIV

Queen Victoria's Pro-German Policy Cause of Oppression in Ireland—Proclamation for the Emancipation of Ireland. *Page 139*

CHAPTER XV

I sail for India—Incidents of Voyage.....*Page 145*

CHAPTER XVI

My Welcome to India in Striking Contrast to that of my Father's—My first Impressions of the Land of Famine—"India's Coral Strands," "The Valley of Dry Bones"—The Dying and the Dead—Shape my Future Life and I resolve to solve the Problem—Incidents of Early Military Life in India...*Page 152*

CHAPTER XVII

Military Life in Secunderabad—I attend Military School—I begin the study of Oriental Languages—Sorrow and Solitude—Ordered to Cannonore, Malabar Coast—Incidents of March—Elephant runs Amuck in Camp!—Diamond fields and ruby mines of India and Burma.....*Page 165*

CHAPTER XVIII

Military Duties—Influence of Missions on Social Life of Military Camps—Oriental Philosophy—I assume the rôle of "The White Yogi!".....*Page 175*

CHAPTER XIX

At Malliapurem—I visit the Warlike Maphlas—In Maphla Town—The Sacred Temple of Talliparamba—A personal encounter with Tiger!—In Bed with a Cobra!.....*Page 183*

CHAPTER XX

A False Alarm!—The Blind Missionary—A True Romance—I refuse the Management of a large Tea and Coffee Plantation—"Pangs of Regret".....*Page 194*

CHAPTER XXI

I rejoin my Regiment—Military Life in Burma—An Exciting Time with a Company of Madras Native Infantry!—I leave the Army—Appointed Inspector of Police—An Exciting Arrest! *Page 201*

CHAPTER XXII

Epidemic of Cholera—My Experience in the Cholera Sheds—I go to sleep with Dead Convicts, Victims of Cholera! *Page 212*

CHAPTER XXIII

I Amuse the General's Daughters—Detective Duty—Chasing Dacoits!—Visit of the Viceroy—A Wild Drive—Rangoon *en fete et en Grande Tenue!*.....*Page 219*

CHAPTER XXIV

Transferred to Mandalay—I am placed in Command of the Burma Military Police—Ambushed and Captured, I Surprise my Captors.....*Page 230*

CHAPTER XXV

I enter the Prison Service—I Supersede my Superiors—Innovation in Prison Administration—A Study of Criminology—The Practical Application of Physiological-Psychology to Abnormal Data, as Found in the Criminal and Insane..*Page 237*

CHAPTER XXVI

Prison Reforms which Affect the Judicial Department and Put a Stop to Wholesale Executions.....*Page 244*

CHAPTER XXVII

An Outbreak of Convicts—Warders Killed and Wounded—Others escape—I run to their Assistance and Find Myself Unarmed and Unsupported before Two Thousand Armed Convicts! *Page 254*

CHAPTER XXVIII

Transferred to Bassein—In the Power of Assassins—I establish Schools—I visit the Malay Peninsula.....*Page 262*

CHAPTER XXIX

A Comedy of Errors—I am taken for an ex-Convict—Shadowed by General Manager of a Department Store—The Bishop's "cooking brandy!".....*Page 272*

CHAPTER XXX

A Passage of Arms with the Rebels—I run Risk of being Converted into Pemican.....*Page 279*

CHAPTER XXXI

I am Taken Dangerously Ill—Being Urged Upon by my Spiritual Adviser I send a Message of Forgiveness to my Grandmother, the Queen, and my Father, and Thereby Reveal my Identity.....*Page 286*

CHAPTER XXXII

I am Recommended for Chair of Burmese in Cambridge University—I Sail for England—Buffeted by Southwest Monsoons, we reach England much Battered and Crippled.....*Page 292*

CHAPTER XXXIII

I Return to Burma—I Espouse the Cause of the People—My Growing Popularity a Menace to those who had Usurped my Rights—Fifteen years of Political Intrigue and Persecution follow.....*Page 298*

CHAPTER XXXIV

I Sail for the United States to treat a Blind Millionaire, but fall into the Hands of the Philistines of New York...*Page 309*

CHAPTER XXXV

Travels in the Interest of Science—I go to California—In the Earthquake of San Francisco—I return to England—Cancer Research—I Receive the thanks of my Father, King Edward VII *Page 315*

CHAPTER XXXVI

Business in New York—I found *The American Statist*—Interest myself in American Politics—A Lady of Worth—The American Legislative Union—Public Health Society to Raise the Standard of the Public Health.....*Page 325*

CHAPTER XXXVII

Conclusion

Prince John Thanks his Many Friends and Faithful Supporters in the British Empire, the Press and many Friends and Supporters in America—Was "The lady in black" the Discarded Wife—the Rightful Queen of England—my Mother, per-

mitted to view the Remains of her Husband—my Father, the King, who, moved by a False Sense of Duty to the Nation and the Coercion of his Mother, had Discarded boh Wife and Child?
Page 334

DIEU ET MON DROIT.
MAY GOD DEFEND THE RIGHT.

ADDENDA.....*Pages 339-461*

ILLUSTRATIONS

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH.....*Frontispiece*
Lineal Successor to Late King Edward VII.

FACING PAGE

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH..... 143
Rex et imperator de jure.

PRINCE JOHN AS A MISSIONARY..... 285

HIS MAJESTY KING EDWARD VII..... 288

QUEEN VICTORIA..... 306

LATE REV. GEO. A. CARPENDER..... 430

TO THE OPEN-MINDED READER

HERE comes a story, a realistic romance, which simply, as such, compels a reading by its human interest and sets us thinking over the mysteries of life and luck. The writer of these lines had known nothing of the author of the book, nor had he ever seen him, when by sheer chance some of its printed pages came to hand.

A general prejudice against claims of this nature gave piquancy to the reading. After allowing it full play, the outcome of a fair consideration of the entire case is this:

The claimant verily believes in his claim, which fact alone lifts him out of the vulgar impostor class. He is not a nobody, with nothing individual to claim our attention but his claim. He has lived a large life, crowded with activities so varied, and in the main so clearly conducted toward the introduction of desirable reforms in the Home and Colonial Government for the better administration of the Empire in the interest of the people, and in the furtherance of universal peace, as proven by the official data cited, that his story would be good and instructive reading without its supreme attraction—the claim. Then, independently of these features, stands the powerful protest against those by whose sanction the most sacred and legal mar-

riage of love can be shattered, its victims torn apart forever, the offspring outlawed from its birthright by the mere sway of a sovereign's sceptre, the decrees of the Bible and the Common Law which governs the common people, who make and unmake kings, set aside at the whim of a despotic or degenerate or meddlesome crowned head, or for the equally convenient screen, "reasons of State."

The personal interest is overshadowed by these vaster issues which it illustrates, questions of vital moment to every citizen of professedly Christian countries. The Royal Marriage Act of George III is no mere antiquated legal bauble, for royal jesters to tickle their courtiers' heads with. In cases besides the one presented in this book it can become a gilded bludgeon when wielded with intent to kill—say trifles like hearts, sacraments, fortunes or just laws. Its interest is not only for British subjects. Our Republic is fast linking itself, fashion by fashion if not heart to heart, with European royalty and English aristocracy in the bonds of holy or other wedlock. American womanhood should have a say in a matter so serious for their exported daughters and posterity.

Over and above the romantic interest in this personal record and plea there is that without which no claimant can ask serious attention, that is a plain, strong, self-proving and temperate presentation of the case. These elements are here and command respect. The rest lies with the reader. He is invited to sit and weigh as he reads. The author has the advantage of not being a professional literary man. He tells his tale with the

artless candor of a child. His earliest recollections are simply recorded; so, too, the adventures of his boyhood as a foster child who from the first had an inkling of a higher parentage. Then follow the strangely ordained series of experiences in the army, with real peril episodes in India, quick and seemingly unusual promotions; then as an officer of rising grades in the prison there, with remarkable incidents, suggestive of the possession of a power, or temperamental gift supposed, but wrongly, to be the peculiar endowment of Orientals. In the healing art, ordinary church and educational work, and his acknowledged genius for "doing things" outside the routine of service duty, the author surprises by his versatility and pluck, for such things are heretical to your machine-made official.

In the later years his efforts have been to turn these practical experiences to practical ends for himself, a man's first duty, and then for his country and this country. Now, when such an one devotes his personal, private efforts to the extremely delicate duty of pursuing his search for what he honestly believes to be the bare justice withheld unjustly by persons, or by a "reason of State," in a country where all royal acts and "reasons of State" are commonly viewed as more than semi-sacred it is obvious that his path must be peculiarly an uphill one, and it is certain that all sorts of big and little stones will be sent rolling down upon him by the fortunate creatures who live away up.

This is the common lot of all claimants. So it

is not surprising to read of sudden interferences when business affairs are on the verge of successful completion and of majestic refusals by liveried servants to present perfectly proper messages to their masters, who, when they learn of flunkey presumptions, administer corrections. These are in the comedies of life and are good for our temper, but a public claimant almost necessarily dwells in the pillory. This is a whiff of the romance of life and serves a wholesome purpose. It is so cheap and easy to fling stones at a deaf and dumb man when his back is turned and he is carrying his load of affairs in both hands that perhaps we should be as indulgent to the sort of people who think it fair sport as we are to the imps who make a midsummer day a fiery torment to the sick and aged, who have no rights, and, anyway, can not get out to hit back. Kings and commoners have their full share of these joys.

Looking not merely at but into this moving picture of a life, strangely shaped by the mysterious forces that bear no name, it would not surprise us if the claimant had pitched his story in a shrill key. He might have made it scandalous and pleaded that, its text being a scandal, the sermon should be to match. But, as already stated, the temperate, and not seldom dignified, tone and spirit of the whole commands respect. If every just claim was absolutely demonstrable, at any moment of time, through every item and document and circumstance from A to Z, laws and law courts would never have come into existence. Probably the extravagant verbiage of the jury bamboozler

originated in the dearth of facts in hand which reasonably prove facts past resurrection. The case here presented needs no vulgar screeching; it would be fatally injured by it.

The author had no lack of models and authorities, such as they are, if he had chosen the sensational method, so alien to kingly grace and noble blood. The press wields more than the power of kings in this our true Republic, and right royally does it use it in matters outside the Treasury and politics departments. If it has a failing it is its liability to mistake its sceptre for a shillalah. It can not whack this book as a book of royal scandal, which would be to advertise it as a "best seller." We have an over-sufficiency of little scandals of our own, but it is nice of course to keep up with the foreign fashions. The more curious, therefore, it is to see writers earn a respectable, certainly a genteel, livelihood by purveying to respectable, at least genteel, newspapers catering to high caste people a daily re-hash of new and decomposed scandals, royal, aristocratic, plutocratic, exclusively besmirching the adored old families of Europe.

The author who submits this book to public analysis does not belong to either of these classes. He does not invite us to sit down to a silver dish which, when we lift the cover, is odorous of slanderous scandal and rotten-ripe apples of Sodom. His claim to royal blood carries at least the stamp of courtly manners. Not so with the garbage gatherers who make their scanty living by it, nor with those who, by selling it at cheap

retail, rake in the millions which pay their entrance fee into the grand stand where they wear the badge of a dollarocracy not yet aristocracy. Leaving those who hunger for high-spiced, mythical "mysteries of the Courts of London" to these, their daily caterers, the present claimant is content that this budget of biography, facts, attestations and arguments shall speak for itself and for his claim.

More than this he does not ask; less than an open-minded reading will be a denial of every claimant's common right.

NOVEMBER 1, 1910.

AN ENGLISHMAN.

PREFACE

BRITISH-AMERICAN PATRIOTISM AND JUSTICE

PATRIOTISM and justice actuated by the all-pervading spirit of moral principle, and directed by the judicious exercise of the divine intelligence of the super-cosmic consciousness, are the magnetic corner stones upon which the British-American people have built the allied world-power Empire-Republic, the center of civilization and Christian enlightenment to which all other nations turn in friendship and peace.

The subject of these Memoirs appeals to the high moral sentiment and spirit of justice of the British-American people, in particular, and of the whole civilized world in general.

British loyalty to the Sovereign is proverbial.

The subject of these Memoirs appeals to British loyalty to protect the *direct line of legitimate lineal succession to the throne,* and to loyally support the legitimate heir-at-law of the late deeply lamented Sovereign, His Majesty King Edward VII.

As a Christian nation, England, in framing the laws by which the civil contract and religious sacrament of holy matrimony, and the right of inheritance, are regulated, based the said laws upon the Divine Laws in the Holy Scriptures,

which are quite clear, and which no earthly Sovereign has power to change, for it is written, "Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled."

A Sovereign who violates the law of God, and the nation, both collectively and individually, that countenances and approves or even tolerates such violation of the Divine Law by their Sovereign, stand equally guilty before God.

The direct line of legitimate lineal succession to the British throne is determined by the following law:

"If a man have two wives, one beloved, and another hated; and they have borne him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the firstborn son be hers that was hated;

"Then it shall be, when he maketh his sons to inherit that which he hath, that he may not make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated, which is indeed the firstborn;

"But shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath; for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his." Deuteronomy, 21: 15, 16 and 17.

Queen Elizabeth recognized and observed this law by reviving the Act 32, Henry VIII C. 38 (repealed in part by 2 and 3 Edward VI C. 23, and in whole by I and 2 p. and M. C. 8, but revived by the I Elizabeth I which enacts that "No prohibition, God's law except, shall trouble or impeach any marriage without the Levitical degrees."

It can not be said that the reigns of Henry VIII and Elizabeth were marked by a higher manifestation of Christian principle and moral sentiment than during the past fifty years. But, the indifference and apathy with which Christian England and the Christian world have countenanced the practice of royal bigamy, and the setting aside by Princes of the Reigning House of their lawful wives, without cause and without due process of law, and the disfranchising and casting off of their legitimate offspring, in favor of plural wives and their illegitimate issue, is a blot upon the refined fabric of our vaunted Christian piety and advanced civilization; since the so-called and despised "heathen" would not stoop to such barbarous and unholy acts.

The harems of the followers of the derided "false prophet" are havens of domestic peace and felicity, when compared to the torture of mind, and body, and soul, of the repudiated wife of a "Christian" Royal Prince. The Buddhist Monarch, His Majesty the King of Siam, has for some years past been conducting a continued model lesson in England for the edification of the British Royal Family and the British public in the ethics of true morality and paternal duty to offspring.

The small army of sons of His Majesty, by his first and plural Queens, attending schools and colleges in England, has been frequently commented upon by the English press. Such, however, is the common misconception of the Christian world of their particular form of religious faith, and of the immunity with which their Kings may violate

the laws of God, that they are loath to accept the lesson of Christian love and paternal duty as illustrated by this so-called "heathen" King.

The "still small voice," the voice of the conscience, speaks to the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and to the Christian people of the great Republic of the United States of America and of the world, to demand that the barbarous custom of Princes in repudiating their lawful wives, and casting adrift their legitimate offspring be stopped, and that the direct line of legitimate lineal succession to the Throne of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland be protected, and that British loyalty and justice be shown to the eldest legitimate son and heir-at-law of His late Majesty King Edward VII.

JOHN, PRINCE OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

SUMMARY OF THE CASE OF PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND vs. ROYAL POLYGAMY

MAY GOD DEFEND THE RIGHT

I was born in Windsor Castle on the 8th of January, 1861.

I have resided in the United States of America for more than ten years.

With the assent of Queen Victoria, my grandmother, and with the consent of my father, the late King Edward, I assumed the family name of the reigning dynasty of Great Britain and Ireland: Guelph. Thus for many years prior to my advent to America I enjoyed the recognition and protection of my father as a legitimate member of the House of Guelph.

My mother, the first Princess Consort of King Edward, comes from one of the most historic of the noble families of the United Kingdom, her ancestors having come in the train of William the Conqueror, and she was considered to be the most beautiful lady in the Royal Court. She has lived in voluntary exile and has been engaged in preaching the Gospel and doing pious service in Asia.

The mutual attachment which sprang up be-

tween the heir apparent to the throne and the beautiful lady of his choice was frowned upon by the Queen and the sovereign will was brought to bear upon the young Prince in a manner calculated to make him amenable to the Queen's own plan in the choice of his future consort.

The Prince of Wales was required to attend the manœuvres at the Curragh, County Kildare, Ireland, in the early spring of 1860.

It was about that time that my father took the opportunity to exercise his self-will and diplomacy, for which he was noted throughout his life, by marrying the bride of his choice—in order to escape the political alliance for which he was slated but which was repugnant to his refined nature.

When Queen Victoria was informed of the marriage she summoned her son and daughter-in-law, establishing the latter in apartments in Windsor Castle and sending the Prince on his travels across the sea to Canada and to the United States. From this fact it is to be presumed that if, in the marriage contracted by my father and mother, there had been one word omitted from the ritual, or any of the ecclesiastical or civil disabilities recognized by English law, the first Princess Consort, my mother, would never have been allowed to set foot in Windsor Castle, much less to live there as a guest to be confined in the royal residence. Hence the reasonable conclusion that their marriage was legal, and, consequently, the expected issue thereof legitimate. My mother was above reproach or suspicion, and her rank was sufficiently high to entitle

her to be the Queen Consort in that it was the equal of that of some of the queens and crown princesses of continental powers of the present day and vastly superior to that of several former Queens of England!

The reason why this book was not published during my father's life is twofold. I was naturally reluctant to embitter the last years of my parents' life by reviving these painful memories, and, secondly, because my father, on October 23, 1906, having found that it was inexpedient, at that time, to further emphasize his sovereign pleasure by royal "command" for due recognition of certain reforms introduced by me, and already supported by His Majesty, expressed his regret that he was "unable to do anything further in the matter," intimating that it was impossible to force the issue without precipitating a national political crisis which would have caused a rupture in the reigning house and which he was naturally anxious to avert during his life.

Recognizing the fact that my father had no alternative but to obey the sovereign command of Queen Victoria in separating from his first Consort, my mother, and, further, that my father's exalted station as Sovereign of the Realm justified his desire that I should allow a matter of such vital political importance as the one in question touching the direct legitimate lineal succession to the throne to rest until after his death, I considered it to be my duty to him and to the Empire to respect his wishes, even at the expense of further self-sacrifice.

Foreseeing, toward the end of 1909, the approaching dissolution of my father, King Edward VII, the long pent-up sorrow of my life broke the bonds of silence, and I decided that the honors, so long withheld from my cruelly wronged mother, should be done her before her husband's demise.

Accordingly, in the month of December last, I wrote to the King, urging him as sovereign, consort and father to lose no further time in publicly acknowledging my mother. Then, also, I began to compile these memoirs.

Under date of January 10, 1910, I again wrote to my father, duly advising him of my intention to publish these memoirs, and, in order that he might be fully informed of my attitude while it was still in his power to exercise his sovereign prerogatives and a husband's privilege to right the wrongs inflicted upon his lawful wife, my mother, I sent him as much of the first draft of the MS. as was then finished.

The legal recognition and protection as a legitimate son which I enjoyed from my father since the time when he first made known my identity in 1893, persuaded me that, even should the King fail to rectify his matrimonial tangle ere he passed from life—an affair involving the question of direct, legitimate, lineal succession—his possible neglect, I said, to take decisive action ought to be considered as indicative rather of his Majesty's statesmanlike conviction that the adjustment had better be left until after his death, than to ill-favor, either toward my mother or myself.

The King offered no objection to my memoirs, though there can be no manner of doubt that the far-reaching effect the publication of a book of this kind must, of necessity, have upon his second family and the British Empire at large, was clearly mirrored in that wise head of his. He also knew of my intention to cause the so-called Royal Marriage Act and the barbarous Act of William and Mary, the Bill of Rights, to be expunged from the statutes of Great Britain yet protested not.

My last letter to my father, under date of April 10, 1910, conveyed my final appeal that he take the necessary steps in the above important matter, but the condition of his health at that time, coupled with the political crisis in England due to the strained relations between the upper and lower houses of Parliament, made it absolutely impossible for King Edward to comply with my filial request, as I realize now.

My father having now been taken from me and from our loyal and devoted people, it becomes my duty as his eldest, legitimate son to right the wrong done my mother, and to put a stop to the practice of unholy royal polygamy, repugnant to the tenets of Christianity and the moral sentiment of all good people.

Even if I were the poorest subject of the United Kingdom, a son of the people, understanding the law as I now do, I would be in honor bound to make war on this Royal Marriage Act in order to enforce compliance with the constitutional law

providing for direct legitimate lineal succession to the throne of Great Britain and Ireland.

Let me state beforehand that I bear no ill will to any member of my late father's family. In my correspondence with my half-brother George—known as George V of Great Britain and Ireland—George, the incumbent of honors, prerogatives and millions, my rightful patrimony, no trace of rancor, of annoyance, even, will be discovered. Being satisfied that justice is bound to triumph in the end, I read with satisfaction of the appointment of my uncle, the Duke of Connaught, to the vice-royalty of Canada; let sister Louise (by half, I am sorry to say) glory in the empty title of Princess Royal, and let my other sisters, sisters-in-law and nephews enjoy their appanages from the nation and the family treasury—*my* family treasury. I envy them not, and, unlike Cousin d'Artois (afterward Charles X), who steeped his body naked in the yellow metal pouring from barrels of coined gold discovered in the Tuilleries cellars after Napoleon's defeat, the inevitable success of my present efforts will find me more worried, perhaps, but no less calm than at the outset of this campaign.

I repeat that I bear no ill-will to George, nor to our common sire. It was an infamous law that separated my mother and the father of her unborn babe; that tore the infant from her young breast; that cast both mother and child adrift—the one to go through life a heartbroken woman, a distracted mother; the other committed to the care of strangers, to be illtreated as a babe, neg-

lected in youth, persecuted in manhood, a wanderer on the face of the earth, a homeless man, a prince without country, maligned, tormented, subjected to poverty through political intrigue and malicious interference with his business interests, falsely accused, beset for years by hired assassins and exposed to imminent and violent death a thousand times.

And the separation of my parents, ordered by Queen Victoria, is but one of the crimes sanctioned by this law that winks at the scarlet sin of royal polygamy. In 1884 the royal lady, my lamented grandmother, appealed to it to force Grand Duke Ludwig of Hesse-Darmstadt to expel his morganatic wife of a few hours from his domains. That H. R. H. was a German Prince and a sovereign availed him nothing since, first and last, he was Victoria's son-in-law, slated to marry my Aunt Beatrice—the Deceased Wife's Sister's bill permitting—and when on January 14, 1892, my oldest half-brother, the Duke of Clarence and Avondale, died rather suddenly, the present *de facto* King, then Prince George Duke of York, was ordered, under the same law, to separate from his lawful first wife and their children in order to wed Princess May, Clarence's betrothed.

Disregarding the Hesse case as without British jurisdiction, we have seen the throne of England twice dishonored, within fifty years from date, by crimes against helpless wives and children: Royal Princes cast off their lawful wife and marry again without procuring a divorce from their first wife.

According to the canonical and civil statutes

by which marriage is regulated in the United Kingdom, or in any other civilized country for that matter, such second matrimonial alliances are null and void, because bigamous; their issue, consequently, is illegitimate.

However, that royal wives, consorts of the highest in the land, are discarded, royal Princes and Princesses of Great Britain disowned; that the bar sinister is raised over Buckingham Palace, and the nation's wealth bestowed upon individuals, who, whatever their personal worth, have absolutely no claim on the public bounty, is not due to my remoter ancestor, the third George, and the actions of my grandmother, Queen Victoria, alone —the citizens of Great Britain and Ireland are equally guilty. Where my relatives sinned, they connived. Whenever, intoxicated with arbitrary power assumed over their immediate family, the sovereigns disregarded the constitution and every moral law, British subjects acquiesced.

That the King can do no wrong has been drummed into the ears of Englishmen so persistently; the story that Mr. Pitt went down on his gouty knees before the King; yes, and my Lord of Marlborough, too, and their Graces of Canterbury, as well as statesmen and conquerors—all this is so popular in our isles that loyalty shrinks from inquiring too closely into rumors of sovereign acts inconsistent with the dignity of the crown and manly honor, inconsistent with proper regard for womanhood and the rights of legitimate offspring.

It is due both to the throne and to the people

to end this scandalous state of affairs. If I were but an humble subject of the great British realm, it would, as stated, be my privilege to contribute to this end—as the King *de jure* it is my sacred duty, and I now ask the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland:

First: To put an end, now and for all time, to the practice of bigamy by princes of the royal house, or the sovereign.

Secondly: To recognize the legal status of the first and only lawful wife of his late Majesty Edward VII, their real Queen Dowager, my mother, which act, as a logical consequence, guarantees recognition of my own rights under the laws of Great Britain and Ireland.

JOHN, *Rex et Imperator de jure.*

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Memoirs of

Prince John de Guelph

CHAPTER I

DIRECT LINEAL SUCCESSION AND ROYAL TITLES OF JOHN II. REX ET IMPERATOR DE JURE OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND AND OF THE EMPIRE OF INDIA

THE lineal descent and succession to the royal title of Prince John de Guelph is determined under the provisions of the following laws, to wit:

I. (a) Under the provisions of the Marriage Acts of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and (b) the Ecclesiastical and Civil Disabilities.

II. Under the provisions of the so-called Royal Marriage Act, the 12 George III C. II.

III. Under the provisions of the law governing legitimate genealogical descent and succession, by which legislative measures it is provided that legitimate offspring *only* possess the legal right to bear, and to transmit to posterity, the family name of the paternal house.

IV. Under the provisions of the legislature governing lineal succession to titles of descendants of the House of Guelph and Saxe-Coburg-et-Gotha.

The provisions of the Ecclesiastical and Civil Marriage Law are very clear; the mutual consent of the parties to the marriage contract, whether in the presence of witnesses or not, and whether committed to writing or not, is all that is necessary within the meaning of the Marriage Acts to establish the validity of marriage.

Any man and woman are capable of marrying, subject to certain disabilities, canonical and civil. The effect of a canonical disability as such is to make the marriage not void but voidable. The marriage must be set aside by regular process, and sentence pronounced during the lifetime of the parties.

England.—In England the civil disabilities are: (1) The fact that either party is already married and has a spouse still living; (2) the fact that either party is of unsound mind; (3) want of full age (puberty), which, according to the Roman law, still in force, is placed at fourteen years for males and twelve years for females; (4) proximity of relationship within the prohibited Levitical degrees.

The most important Acts in force in England are the 4 George IV C. 76 and 6 & 7 William IV C. 85. By the 19 & 20 Victoria C. 96, "The consent of parents is not necessary to the validity of the marriage, even of minors; but marriage under

the age of puberty, with or without such consent, is void."

The Royal Marriage Act (12 George III C. II), passed in consequence of the marriages of the dukes of Cumberland and Gloucester, enacted that "no descendant of his late Majesty George II (other than the issue of Princesses married or who may marry into foreign families) shall be capable of contracting matrimony without the previous consent of his Majesty, his heirs and successors, signified under the great seal. But in case any descendant does contract a marriage disapproved by his Majesty, such descendant, after giving twelve months' notice to the privy council, may contract such marriage, and the same may be solemnized without the consent of his Majesty, and shall be good, except both Houses of Parliament shall declare their disapprobation thereto."

There is nothing within the meaning of the so-called Royal Marriage Act to invalidate a marriage contracted by a "descendant of his late Majesty George II," without having previously obtained the consent of the sovereign under the great seal, within the meaning of the canonical and civil disabilities, or within the meaning of the statutory legislation, by which the contract and sacrament of marriages is regulated.

The statute which establishes the rule on canonical and civil disabilities, and the unconstitutionality of the Royal Marriage Act, 12 George III C. II, and the validity of a marriage contracted by a royal Prince, "descendant of his late Majesty George II," without the consent of the sov-

ereign, is the 32 Henry VIII C. 38 (repealed in part by 2 & 3 Edward VI C. 32, in whole by 1 & 2 P. & M. C. 8, but revived by the 1 Elizabeth C. I), which enacts that "no prohibition, God's law except, shall trouble or impeach any marriage without the Levitical degrees."

With reference to the first marriage of his Majesty King Edward VII, contracted without the formal consent of her late Majesty Queen Victoria, with the most beautiful daughter of one of the most noble families in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and therefore duly qualified by birth and title to have become the Queen of England, there is no record of a royal proclamation under the great seal to set aside the said marriage.

In the absence of any public record of a royal proclamation by the sovereign or legal process to set aside the first marriage of his Majesty King Edward VII, the formal consent of the late sovereign, as contained in the royal proclamation under the great seal, to the marriage of his Majesty and the Princess Alexandra would be irregular, and the second marriage was contracted in violation of provisions of the canonical and civil disabilities, which, according to the State Legislature, include: (1) "The fact that either party is already married and has a spouse still living"; and (2) in violation of the provisions of the 1 Elizabeth C. I, which enacts that "no prohibition, God's law except, shall trouble or impeach any marriage without the Levitical degrees."

The provisions of the Acts of the Legislature governing legitimate genealogical descent are clear and are generally understood.

Legitimacy of offspring is legally established in a person who bears, and who is publicly known by, the family name of the paternal house.

A paternal parent by recognizing the right of his offspring to be so known and called by his family name, legitimatizes and thereby legally recognizes and protects the rights and privileges of such legitimate offspring to bear and to transmit to posterity the family name of the paternal house.

In the case of the late sovereign, his Majesty King Edward VII, the King was the head of the royal House of Guelph, and had, therefore, the sovereign power to recognize the legitimacy of, and to legitimatize, offspring of the House of Guelph, according to his royal pleasure.

His Majesty King Edward VII could command the recognition of the legitimacy of his own offspring by his Majesty's first Princess-Consort, or other offspring of the reigning family, by one or more of the following methods of procedure:

I. By royal proclamation signified under the great seal.

II. By his last will and testament.

III. By the royal command that such offspring shall be known and recognized by the family name of the royal House of Guelph, or by such other name or title as his Majesty may be graciously pleased to confer upon such offspring.

IV. By permitting such offspring to bear and

to be publicly known by the name of the royal family of the House of Guelph, and authorizing the recognition of the same, by general usage and custom, by correspondence or otherwise.

To determine the legitimacy of the issue of the first marriage of his Majesty King Edward VII, Prince John de Guelph, the subsequent setting aside of that marriage by royal proclamation or by other legal process would not have invalidated the said marriage during the time of its existence, up to the time of such royal proclamation, or sentence by other regular process according to law, assuming that such royal proclamation had been issued, nor would such annulment, had it been legally carried out, have illegitimatized the said issue.

Under the provisions of the Ecclesiastical and State law, and irrespective of the consent or non-consent of the late sovereign to said marriage, and of the question as to whether the said marriage was or was not set aside according to law, the legitimacy of the said issue of the marriage was legally established by the recognition and protection accorded to him for many years past as a legitimate member of the House of Guelph by his late father, his Majesty King Edward VII as the sovereign head of the reigning house.

Confirming the foregoing statement of facts relative to the legal recognition and protection of the legitimate lineal descent of Prince John de Guelph, it may be stated that while the said John de Guelph, for political and State reasons, during the early years of his life, lived in seclusion, his

identity was made public in India, during what was thought by his physicians to be a fatal illness, in the year one thousand eight hundred and ninety-three, and was confirmed at that time by his father, then Prince of Wales.

From the above-named year the subject of these memoirs continued to bear, and has been publicly known by, the family name of his paternal parent. The legitimacy of John de Guelph is legally established by virtue of such public recognition of his identity as a legitimate member of the House of Guelph.

His legitimacy was further confirmed by his Majesty King Edward VII, immediately following the coronation of his Majesty in 1902, by a command to the War Office to entertain official relations with the business house of Guelph & Son, under which firm name and style John de Guelph was then and is at the present time conducting his financial business.

The London offices of Guelph & Co. were then at Grosvenor Mansions, 82 Victoria Street, Westminster, S.W., and at 20 Bishopsgate Street Without, E.C.

The legitimacy of John de Guelph is further established by extensive documentary evidence of private correspondence of an affectionate and filial nature between him and his father, King Edward VII, and the mass of official correspondence between him and the various departments of the British Government covering a period of many years.

In corroboration of the above statement, part

of the aforesaid private and official documentary evidence is reproduced.

The hereditary titles and qualification thereto of all members of the House of Guelph are defined by law, as set forth in the *Almanach de Gotha,* to wit:

MAISON BRUNSWICK-LUNEBOURG

(*Maison des Guelfes*)

Les enfants du chef act. de la maison portent le titre de prince roy. ou princesse roy. de Grande-Bretagne et d'Irlande, duc ou duchesse de Brunswick et de Lunebourg avec la qualification d'Alt. Royale.

GRANDE-BRETAGNE ET IRELANDE

(*Maison des Guelfes ou de Brunswick-Lunebourg*)

Les cadets portent le titre de princes et princesses roy. de Grande-Bretagne et d'Irlande, princes et princesses de Saxe-Coburg-et-Gotha, ducs et duchesses de Saxe, avec la qualification d'Alt. Royale.

GRANDE-BRETAGNE ET IRLANDE

(Maison des Saxe-Coburg-et-Gotha)

Les cadets descendant de la reine Victoria portent le titre de princes et princesses royale de Grande-Bretagne et Irlande, et les princes et princesses de Saxe-Coburg-et-Gotha, ducs et duchesses de Saxe, avec la qualification d'Alt. Royale.

During the lifetime of the late King Edward, then, the hereditary titles and qualifications of the

subject of these memoirs, John de Guelph, were Prince of Great Britain and Ireland, Duke of Saxe, Royal Highness. In addition, as the direct legitimate issue of the House of Guelph, the created titles of Duke of Cornwall, Duke of Rothesay, Count of Chester, Count of Carrick, Count of Dublin, Baron of Renfrew, and, according to the law of both Church and State, heir-apparent to the throne of Great Britain and Ireland and the Empire of India.

The foregoing presentation of the case in brief is confined to facts, statutes and the canonical and civil disabilities, by which all marriages in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland are regulated. These memoirs are given to the public to fill a higher purpose, however, than that of self-interest.

For the future protection of the honor of womanhood, of the sanctity of the divine institution of matrimony, of the rights of innocent offspring, of the honor and dignity of the Constitution of the State and Empire, of the holy order and divine authority of the Church, and of the more sacred observance of the Laws of Almighty God, it is my purpose to arouse public sentiment that immediate action may be taken for the abolition of abuses against the sacred rights and privileges of Princes of the reigning House, and of the people, to be effected by the repealment of two Acts of the British Legislature, which are as unconstitutional as they are barbarous, bigoted and unholy in the sight of God and man:

I. *The Royal Marriage Act 12 George III C. II.*
II. *The Statute of William and Mary* (The Bill of Rights.)

In order to understand the importance of adjusting the first of the above Acts it is well to study the subject from a legal standpoint, as never presented to the public before.

He who is guilty of willfully deceiving a virtuous woman by inducing her to go through a form of "mock marriage," the victim being led to believe that she is being legally married to the man, would be personally dealt with by nine hundred and ninety-nine out of a thousand fathers, or, would be lynched by the outraged community in order to expedite justice. It may be safely conjectured that the jurists of the civilized world would hold such a father or community justified in meting out swift justice to such a villain. By the due process of law such a criminal would be sentenced to a long term of imprisonment.

What shall we say of the so-called Royal Marriage Act?

We can not take seriously the verdict of laymen, or the babblings of irresponsible persons who pose as authorities on the subject, and declare that according to the provisions of the Royal Marriage Act, a prince is "incapable of contracting a marriage" without having obtained the consent of the Sovereign thereto signified under the great seal.

King George III was in spirit, if not in fact, an autocratic monarch. So exaggerated were his

ideas of the exalted station of Kings and royalty in general, that he looked upon the descendants of George II as beings of a more celestial order than he considered his non-royal subjects to be.

His sensitiveness on this matter filled him with a desire to curb the matrimonial inclination of his two brothers; and, at the same time, to keep his son, the Prince of Wales, in leading-strings, that he might exercise his sovereign rights as a match-maker in disposing of his royal relatives. Hence, his ridiculous bluff, the creation of the Royal Marriage Act, the 12 George III C. II.

Had George III in his speech from the Throne commanded the sun to stand still, the moon to reverse its course, and the oceans to become dry land, he would have acted with greater wisdom than he did by his insane attempted usurpation of the attributes of the Almighty, in presuming to turn the course of human love. Edicts on the sun, moon and ocean would have been harmless; whereas, the royal decree against the affairs of the human heart has wrought untold injustice in the lives of many of England's most noble princes and Britain's purest maidens, not to speak of innocent offspring robbed of their birthright, or of the confusion occasioned thereby in matters of grave importance to the State and Empire.

Bearing in mind, then, the fact that the so-called Royal Marriage Act was the creation of the whim of George III, to prevent, if possible, the forming of *mesalliances* in the royal family, can it be supposed that had George III considered his Royal Marriage Act to be constitutional he would

have been a party to what he could only have looked upon as *mock marriages* between his brothers, the dukes of Cumberland and Gloucester, with Mrs. Horton (Lord Ianham's daughter) and the Dowager Countess Waldgrave? Can it be thought that he would have connived at a *mock marriage* by his own son? Can the world think that the royal dukes of Cumberland and Gloucester, brothers of George III, and George IV, and, during the last reign, the late Duke of Cambridge, Edward VII, when Prince of Wales, and George, Prince of Wales, and others of the Royal House, would be guilty of going through "mock marriages" to deceive and betray the ladies whom they loved and whom they wished to make their wives? The idea is too preposterous to be entertained for an instant. And yet, should we hold the so-called Royal Marriage Act to be constitutional, *mock marriage* would be the only explanation of the alliances contracted by those royal princes contrary to the provisions of the said Royal Marriage Act.

Be it said in all honor to the British Royal Family, that the so-called Royal Marriage Act 12 George III C. II, is unconstitutional and invalid, and that Princes of the Royal House were not guilty of deceiving the ladies concerned by mock marriages.

The marriage of George IV when Prince of Wales, contracted in violation of the provisions of the said Royal Marriage Act, was held to be valid, both as a contract and as a sacrament, by (1) George III, *the creator of the Act;* (2) by

other members of the royal family; (3) by the Archbishop of Canterbury, Dr. Moore, who challenged both George III and the Prince of Wales in consequence of his convictions; (4) by the Princess Caroline, the bigamous wife of George IV; (5) by the Houses of Parliament; (6) by the Pope, on whose decision the first wife of George IV returned to live with him after his separation from the Princess Caroliine; (7) by William IV, by whose command the widow of George IV wore widow's weeds in mourning her late husband; (8) by Edward VII, who authorized the publication of said marriage on removing the marriage certificate and other documents from Coutt's Bank.

That the foregoing is historically true, and that the said Sovereigns, including George III himself, the Privy Council and the Legislature, and all authorities of the present time, is fully borne out in history, as shown in the previous pages of this chapter.

It is fortunate that George IV had no issue by his legal wife, and also that she was of the Roman Catholic faith, as in the adjustment of the laws, such issue would have been the legitimate lineal descendants, and in direct line of succession to the throne.

The omission of her late Majesty Queen Victoria to set aside by legal process the marriage of my father and mother contracted in 1860 contrary to the provisions of the so-called Royal Marriage Act, was a grave error of judgment and is unfortunate for all concerned. It must be stated,

however, that, as in the case of George IV, the omission was by design and not through ignorance of the unconstitutionality of the Royal Marriage Act. The effect is the same in both cases in so far as the position of the second wife is concerned.

Evidence is not wanting either in England or in Denmark to substantiate the fact. Former members of the royal household of the late King Christian have testified to having been present at animated discussions in 1860 on the proposed marriage of the then Prince of Wales and the Princess Alexandra. The late Prince-Consort strongly disapproved of the proposed marriage:

1. On the ground that the rank of the Prince's living Consort was too high, and the exalted station of her family too important to admit of the marriage being set aside by regular process of law in favor of the Danish Princess without raising a storm of public indignation throughout the Kingdom.

2. That the issue of the existing marriage being a Prince, the position of the children by the plural wife, the Princess Alexandra, should the Queen persist in carry out this alliance, and should there be any offspring from such an alliance, would be no better than was that of the Princess Caroline (the bigamous wife of George IV.).

The late King Christian of Denmark, it is said, supported the views of the Prince-Consort, and was likewise averse to the proposed matrimonial alliance between the Prince and His Majesty's daughter.

The autocratic will of the late Queen Victoria,

which, as is well known, in matters of matrimony in the royal family, was more pronounced even than that of George III, was brought to bear with all the diplomacy of a woman upon Queen Louise of Denmark. As is usual in such cases petticoat perversity prevailed against the sound judgment and wise counsel of the Prince-Consort and the King of Denmark and against the divine decree of the King of Kings.

The Prince-Consort, it is said, solemnly warned his Royal Spouse that in Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, they had not the unstable character as exhibited by George IV under similar circumstances, but that they had to deal with a Prince and nobleman of dominant will and determined character. That His Royal Highness had, in fact, positively assured them that he would never deny his lawful wife, or their legitimate offspring—the Prince John of Wales.

The parental recognition and protection accorded to me by my father,* in the face of much unpleasantness, has proved that he religiously kept his royal word, for at the last fleeting review of a spent life he said, "I think I have done my duty."

The juggling with marriage laws for no other purpose than that of conniving at the propensity of an occasional dissolute royal prig to play ducks and drakes with the honor and virtue of the most noble, the most virtuous, and the most innocent, of Great Britain's fair daughters, is a reason that

*See complete story in addenda.

can not be entertained for a moment; but the existence of the Act is a menace to every innocent and unwary lady in the land.

The existence of the so-called Royal Marriage Act of 1772 is an insult to the intelligence of every Prince of the Royal House, in that it would reduce him to the position of a minor in leading-strings, or an imbecile, incapable of exercising his own judgment in a matter in which the natural law of love is the right and privilege even of the brute creation, to say nothing of the right of judgment in the choice of life companions being enjoyed by the least of the subjects of the realm.

Thus it is in the vast Empire on which the sun never sets, the Sovereign who is credited with intelligence enough to rule over more than one-third of the inhabitants of the earth is placed in the ludicrous position of being deprived of the two fundamental rights which constitute the basic principle of our civilization, and enjoyed by his five hundred million subjects, the royal princes excepted:

1. The Divine right to choose for himself a wife, in accordance with the institution of holy matrimony.

2. The Divine right to worship Almightly God according to the dictates of his own conscience.

By the Statute of William and Mary, or the Bill of Rights, the Divine right of man, and the basic principle upon which the Christian world is governed to-day, the Law of God is made secondary to the law of the land. The Heir-Apparent who would worship God according to his conscience, if

his conscience dictated the observance of the Roman Catholic faith, would have to choose between God and the crown, with the only alternative of committing perjury, by swearing against his own conscience. The Sovereign is moreover reduced to the farcical position of having to choose between his choice of a wife and the crown, should his choice happen to be, as was the case of George IV, a professor of the Roman Catholic faith. The law of the land may thus abuse the most sacred rights of man and woman, and encourage apostacy and sacriligious acts of professing a change of religious views, by leaving one faith, or, what is more pertinent, professing to do so for ulterior purposes, thus debasing the very first rights of our being.

It is well to bear in mind that while Mr. Gladstone's Religious Disabilities Removal Bill was defeated, and the fanatical Act of a bygone age is still observed in this twentieth century of religious liberty, and that, while the Sovereign and Heir-Apparent to the throne with their respective wives are prohibited from these most sacred rights of man, according to the present system of constitutional government, it is possible that any law, even to the changing of the form of Constitutional Monarchy, may be enacted by the majority of a single vote of a Roman Catholic member of either the House of Commons or Lords, and the Sovereign thereby deposed by the Catholic majority of one!

The foregoing was written in November, 1909, prior to the last general election, the result of

which gave the Roman Catholics the balance of power in the British Parliament. Hence, the statement that the Sovereign, who is barred from serving God according to the dictates of his conscience, should his conscience dictate the Roman Catholic faith, may be deposed by a small majority of Roman Catholic members is quite within the bounds of possibility, and I am not alone in anticipating the event.

CHAPTER II

CASPAR HAUSER REDIVIVUS—NOT QUITE

NEARLY forty-eight years before I saw the light at Windsor Castle, the Prince of Wales-to-be as the first-born son of the first-born son of Victoria, Queen of Great Britain and Ireland, the Consort of the heir to the Grand Duchy of Baden became the mother of a healthy male child at Carlshruhe Palace (September 29, 1812).

Like my own mother, H. R. H. happened to be not of the blood royal, but, unlike the great lady referred to, my mother belonged to the highest aristocracy of the ancient kingdom of Ireland, while the Beauharnais were looked upon as rather an itinerant lot. That notwithstanding Napoleon deigned to bestow her hand on Prince Charles and she was recognized as hereditary Grand Duchess by all the great powers and the small. Stephany proved to be all that could be asked of a ruler's wife. As my grandmother, Queen Victoria, favored England with numerous princes and pricesses, so the sprightly Napoleonite peopled the barren castles of her pretty adopted fatherland—only they did not live long. Though begot by parents noted for health and vigor, and

surrounded by every luxury and care, one and all contracted the fatal habit of dying soon after birth —a terrible blow to the young mother, but a decided comfort to the Hochbergs, claimants of the Baden throne by a left-handed marriage.

However, while the offspring done away with were girls, the suspicious number of deaths in the Grand Ducal nursery was looked upon as a mere family affair. But when, on the date mentioned, a son was born to H. R. H., the court and diplomats accredited in Carlsruhe began to regard the situation seriously: A son of Napoleon's adopted daughter destined for a German crown!

Napoleon—the air was full of ugly rumors regarding his Russian enterprises just then. "He was bound to retreat, his grand army to be cut to pieces on the way back to civilization." Was it the beginning of the end so long phophesied?

At any rate, this semi-French grandson of the great Napoleon (fast becoming "Little Nap")—was he to thwart the hopes of the German claimants?

Even while these portentous questions were discussed, stories whispered about palace and town intimated that the "White Lady" had been seen at the castle—at that period every little burgrave commanded one of these conveniences—and during the night from October 15th to 16th the sentinel stationed in the corridor leading to Stephany's apartments came running to the guard-room, pale and atremble, and reported that the historic ghost had just stepped from the wall, "all white and

fearsome-looking," sending him sprawling down the stairs.

This "White Lady" was none other than Countess Hochberg, who brought a dying babe to Stephany's lying-in chamber, carrying away her healthy Prince through a secret door, hidden by tapestry. The stolen Prince was turned over to one Burkhard, chamberlain, and by him to one Hennenhofer, as big a scoundrel as the other, who spirited the child away to Falkenhaus, the Hochbergs' country seat. Next morning, when H. R. H.'s attendants awoke from the sleeping draught, they found the heir to the Grand Duchy cold and stiff, and his death was bulletined accordingly. Three days later, by the way, the stolen boy's grandfather began his disastrous retreat from Moscow.

Fifteen years passed. Stephany had borne another son and lost him like the first; two or three more daughters had "blessed" her union with Charles, and they had joined their sisters. She grieved for them as mothers will grieve, but, somehow, retained an abundant faith that her oldest son was alive. Behold his first public appearance in the tallow market at Nuremberg, May 26, 1828, a biped, more animal than man, walking on all fours, slobbering, whining, pronouncing with difficulty a few one-syllable words that sounded more like yaps or grunts than product of a human voice. For sixteen years this heir of a Grand Duchy had expiated for the crime of being a Napoleonite's son by solitary confinement in a Hochberg stable, goats and sheep his sole companions.

The world held its breath and royalty hid its head in shame as Caspar Hauser's story gradually leaked out. Offers to educate him, restore him to his rights! On April 1, 1830, the reigning Grand Duke, Leopold, declared in the state council that he would receive Caspar in his family and give him one of his daughters for wife. Noble promises, fine words—perish the thought of man's inhumanity to man! To jail with the dastard who hints at royal turpitude, particularly when my Lord Stanhope comes forward to be a second father to Stephany's son.

But on December 14, 1833, said Royal Prince was foully murdered at Ansbach, Bavaria, and "Finis" was written under the affair of Grand Duchess Stephany and her first-born.

"Finis" Queen Victoria tried to write under the affair of John de Guelph, too, when, on or about January 8, 1861, she turned over the newborn babe of Albert Edward's Princess-Consort to a maid-servant to "bring up in obscurity and ignorance of his rank"; but somehow my grandmother's intentions with regard to the lawful heir to the throne of Great Britain and Ireland miscarried, for my foster-mother's sense of duty was as pronounced as her rugged honesty was aggressive.

Unlike Caspar, I never suffered an *entourage* of sheep and goats—those useful animals would have been quite out of date gamboling attendance upon a Prince in the latter half of the nineteenth century—nor were the three R's kept from me as State secrets, and I was long past the age allotted

to the heir of Baden ere threatened by assassins for the first time.

More's the pity that the royal "Finis" cut short the European career of my beloved mother, who shared with the Grand Duchess Stephany the sad pre-eminence of beauty and a mother's worst misfortune—separation from her child.

The foregoing is ample proof that a crown is no protection against man's longings, either physical or sentimental, and that, while it's easy enough to be the son of a King, for a Prince Royal to be labeled differently is easier still.

CHAPTER III

MARRIAGE OF THE FIRST PRINCESS-CONSORT TO H. R. H. THE PRINCE OF WALES

My mother was as great an Irish beauty in her teens as ever lived when she renewed acquaintance with my late father, then Prince of Wales, at the Curragh of Kildare, in the second or third month of 1860.

They had previously met at court and at the town houses and country seats of relatives and friends, with a hundred eyes watching their every movement, with listeners galore, for the Prince was young and impressionable and Lady Mary fit to be a Queen, every inch of her.

An English Queen come out of Ireland! High treason most horrible to even think of such an eventuality, for the England of the Normans and Plantagenets, of the Houses of Lancaster and of York, of the Tudors and Stuarts, had been committed to German rule a hundred and forty-five years and more, and Queen Victoria would as soon have adopted the religion of our earliest claimed ancestor, King David, than consider the marriage of any of her kith and kin outside her hallowed German family circle and connections.

As everybody knows, the Curragh is a famous military camp southwest of Dublin, and because my grandmother had given strict orders that her son be treated like any other army officer assigned to duty during the manœuvres, the Prince of Wales was accorded such freedom of action as he had never known in England.

For the first time he durst mingle freely with congenial persons; here he was permitted to give rein to his native tongue without being reminded that German was the language *par excellence* in the highest circles. What a revelation when he met Lady Mary unheralded by court marshal and without the leading strings of a mistress of the robe!

Ladies invited to the court of England in those days had to dress after a certain abominable style favored by ultra-German taste. This my father hated with a fierce hatred, born of love for the picturesque, of contempt for formalism—the blooming Irish lass of ducal lineage attired in the quaint costume of her native isle became his *beau idéal.* And they loved, these happy young people. All the time the Prince could steal from his duties, he devoted to the woman of his choice, destined to become the mother of his oldest son.

About Curragh Camp and my father's stay in February and March of 1860, I collected much interesting material from persons that knew him while there, several ladies and gentlemen now deceased, but before I had time to put the material in order or to copy the various papers and documents kindly lent, the earthquake and conflagra-

tion of San Francisco destroyed these never-to-be-replaced records, and I durst not trust myself to reproduce them from memory.

I remember having seen a letter from my grandmother, the Queen, to the commanding general, thanking him for courtesies extended to the Prince of Wales, and expressing hope that my father would profit by the experience gone through under the eyes of so many distinguished army officers. Her Majesty's letter was based, of course, on reports made to her, and she knew only what the Prince of Wales' official mentor told her. And that gentleman said, of course, no more than he knew himself, or considered desirable for the Queen to have knowledge of, laying particular stress on the fact that my father had conducted himself throughout in a "most soldierly" manner.

How it must have hurt the Queen to find, some years later, the German press united in declaring that the heir to the crown of Great Britain had "no notion whatever of military affairs!" It was after my father had been created honorary colonel of some Prussian Hussar regiment.

When he went to inspect his troopers, he cut short some of the official tomfoolery and masquerades, which gave grave offense. At the same time he refused to don regulation shaft boots, such as Abraham Lincoln used to wear, only more fancy and set off by silver lace. Instead, he wore ordinary walking boots, clothing his lower limbs in riding shafts appropriately trimmed. While the first transgression was bad enough from the German standpoint, the last was rated nothing

short of crime, and the papers solemnly avowed that a Prince who would not wear jack-boots was unfit for a war lord's dignity.

"The British army is bound to deteriorate if H. R. H. becomes King," they cried; "but, of course, that will not be Germany's disadvantage," added some of the journals slyly.

Those who appreciate how completely my father out-generaled our good cousins and particularly my Cousin William I. R. when he came to the throne, will smile at the prophecy, but at the time of its launching it was no laughing matter.

No doubt my father joked about it, for his sense of the ridiculous was keener than most Englishmen's; but Victoria, ever ready to accept as gospel truth anything with a German trademark, was much distressed, and jack-boots figured in her correspondence with my father for quite a while.

To return to the Curragh. The general commanding had seen nothing—whether he closed his eyes, or suffered from dull man's blindness, we will not investigate now—and my parents enjoyed a short season of undisturbed bliss, probably no more than a month in duration, though.

Their marriage took place at Kingstown on or about April 1st, and one of the most pretentious houses in the town is still pointed out to visitors and tourists as the temporary residence of the "Prince of Wales and the first Princess-Consort." "The Honeymoon House" they call it in popular parlance to this day.

The private wedding and the Kingstown sojourn occurred after my father's service at the Curragh

had officially terminated, and while he was supposed to enjoy a furlough with his chum, the Earl of Sandwich, who afterward accompanied him to the United States.

Scions of the House of Sandwich have always been among the most resourceful, you know—behold the first that sprang into world-wide notice, Lord John, whose profligacy was wont to shock my "Dutch" uncle, the third George, the gentleman who "practiced all the virtue he knew," and, accordingly, thought himself privileged to command the faith, control the thoughts and even the hearts of the hundreds of millions subject to him. George could not manage his own family; the Prince of Wales ignored him when he married Mrs. Fitzherbert; his son of York refused to be stupefied by the dullness of the courts of Kew and Windsor, and decamped; and the Duke of Cumberland, marrying Mrs. Horton, caused the King to promulgate the iniquitous Royal Marriage Act, preaching polygamy as do the laws of the Prophet.

Such being the state of things in the bosom of the royal family, it's small wonder that the King's frown and his persistent preaching failed to reform Lord John, who thought nothing of spending night and day without ever moving from the gaming table, and, when hungry, ordered a piece of meat between bread. In the clubs and gambling houses such an impromptu meal became known, as we know it to-day, as "sandwich," and "Jemmy Twitcher"—nickname for the Earl—thought it better fun than people's allusions to

Miss Ray, the actress, whom a rival, Reverend Hackman, murdered from jealousy.

Strategy and diplomacy, crystallizations of Jemmy's cleverness immortalized in the "Heroic Epistle," were the portion of the Earl of Sandwich, my father's chum—qualities that helped to smooth the path of the royal lovers and keep discovery at a distance for a time at least. But there were several in the secret, and they were whispering so much of the Prince of Wales' married happiness and the bonny Irish Queen he was to seat on the throne of the United Kingdom—official Kingstown, withal, was so alive to the honor conferred upon her: the "affair" could not be kept long from so active a sovereign as was Queen Victoria.

CHAPTER IV

THE ROYAL FAMILY COUNCIL AT BUCKINGHAM PALACE

ANY ONE at all acquainted with her late Majesty's character may imagine the result: The mother's outraged feelings, the monarch's fears and apprehensions, the beloved German kin's ravings! A family council was called in all haste at Buckingham Palace, my grandfather, Prince Albert, presiding.

The Queen, who had a judicial mind and, above all, desired matters of State or semi-State conducted in proper style, had commanded the Lord Chamberlain to submit the points at law.

The first point raised by his Lordship was to the effect that there was possibly no ground for apprehension whatever, as the lady, being of Irish birth, was, in all probability, a Catholic, which eventuality rendered her marriage to a royal British Prince null and void under the law.

The Queen could hardly restrain herself from interrupting his Lordship's preamble. When he was about to begin arguments, she cut him short by an imperious gesture.

"Unfortunately, the marriage of my son does not come under that head," she said, "for his bride is a Protestant," whereupon the Prince-Consort read some official dispatches to that effect.

"Your Lordship will proceed," commanded my grandmother, without even attempting to hide her impatience.

The Lord Chamberlain drew from another pocket of his portfolio the Royal Marriage Act (12 George III C. II). After explaining, for the benefit of the alien members of the family council, that this Act was passed in consequence of the marriages with commoners of George III's brothers, the Duke of Cumberland and the Duke of Gloucester, his Lordship read the law setting forth that no member of the British royal family shall be capable of contracting a legal marriage without the previous consent of the reigning sovereign, signified under the great seal.

So intense was the Queen's excitement that, for once, she forgot her dignity and jumped from her chair, and the wish being father to the thought, she seems to have considered the Lord Chamberlain's business finished. "We thank your Lordship," she said, with a gesture signifying dismissal. "The family council will now go into secret session."

Though understanding that his presence was no longer desired, the Chancellor kept his place, facing her Majesty. Slowly and deliberately he drawled out: "Begging your Majesty's pardon, my oath of office binds me to submit the law in full, to wit: that in case a member of the royal family does contract a marriage disapproved by the ruler, such marriage, if otherwise legal, will become lawful after twelve months' notice to the

privy council, except both houses of Parliament shall declare disapprobation thereto."

A dark shadow passed over Queen Victoria's face. "As a matter of course," she said, "I am familiar with the act quoted, though memory was at fault concerning the exact wording. Do I now understand that your Lordship quoted the entire statute?"

"At your Majesty's service, in a general way, but not as fully as in the written argument submitted," replied the Chancellor, handing the Queen's secretary a memorandum of half a dozen or more pages. "But before I have the honor to retire, let me draw your Majesty's attention to the paragraph stipulating that the sovereign may annul a marriage such as referred to by royal proclamation."

"Royal proclamation!" cried Prince Albert; "that solves the question." But the Queen made him a sign to go no further. Assuming the *ralis majestatis,* she said in her haughtiest tone:

"We, the sovereign, will announce our will and pleasure regarding this matter in due time."

In the meanwhile the Chancellor had retreated to the door. As he bowed himself out, the Queen gave a sniff of impatience.

"My good cousins," she addressed the assembled royalties, "we thank you for your ready attendance and bind you by your honor to keep the matter brought to your attention a profound secret. Not a word of it to any one, least to our relatives outside the kingdom."

Then, looking straight at the Prince-Consort, she added slowly: "We have quite made up our mind what to do, but in case of unforeseen emergencies will be glad to avail ourselves of your valued advice."

Victoria motioned to her secretary, who sounded a bell. The big folding-doors were thrown open, and the distinguished assembly filed out after every one had kissed her Majesty's hand, the Duke of Cambridge being the last to withdraw.

When the Consort, who had attended him to the door, stood once more in the sovereign's presence, my grandmother said curtly: "We will announce our plan in the Queen's closet. Your arm, Prince."

The imperious manner in which the Queen had been pleased to conduct the "council" had severely tried Prince Albert's patience, for, though jealous of her prerogatives, Victoria, as a rule, asked the Consort's advice, even if she did not intend to follow it. Now that they were alone, he expected her to recognize his rights as father and husband. The haughty "we" and "our" therefore struck him as incongruous with the situation.

Dropping into German, as he was wont to do under certain circumstances, he said: "*Mein liebes Frauchen,* don't you think that the father is entitled to be heard as well as the mother?"

"No sentimentalities, please," replied the Queen with threatening emphasis on the last word. "The heir to the throne has disgraced himself by defying the law of the land. Hence, at this moment, I can think of our child only as the Prince

of Wales, and with him the sovereign must deal, not the mother. After the boy comes home you may give him a thrashing, if you like, but until then the Queen of Great Britain and Ireland will conduct the affair according to her sovereign will and pleasure."

CHAPTER V

A RIGHT ROYAL TIFF—LIVELY SCENE IN THE QUEEN'S CLOSET

THE royal couple had entered the Queen's closet. "Ladies, I will not require your services until an hour before dinner," said the Queen to her maids of honor as she seated herself on the sofa. She did not ask the Prince to sit down while she unfolded her plans.

"The War Office," she began, "will order the Prince of Wales to report for duty without a moment's delay. You will attend to this and make it plain that any officer, high or low, who fails to carry out my orders promptly, will be cashiered. The Prince must travel without stop, and his attendants will be held responsible that he communicates with no one *en route*.

"Arrived in London, he shall be conducted to Buckingham Palace, there to await my orders. I intend to summon him even before he has time to change his traveling dress," added the Queen, "and you shall be present at our meeting."

The last was said in rather a condescending tone, which the Consort did not like, but that her Majesty had done him the honor not to ignore him entirely was enough encouragement for the time.

"And what shall be done about Lady Mary?" he demanded in an attempt to show his authority.

The Queen slapped her knee impatiently, as her cousin of Weimar, wife of the Prussian King, was wont to do when agitated.

"The sovereign will deal with that young person, and the sovereign only," replied her Majesty in a petulant voice.

"But may I not inquire the nature of your plans, at least?" pleaded the Consort.

"The Queen resolves as follows," said my grandmother, accentuating each word: "An aide of the Lord Chancellor, whose name will be sent to me presently, will leave for Kingstown to-night, bearing letters of a business character to Lady Mary's father. I myself will forward a few lines to the Duchess by my trusted maid Susan, suggesting that my servant take charge of Lady Mary and conduct her to London and then to Windsor. At Windsor she is to remain in the strictest seclusion until after her confinement."

"You mean to recognize the marriage? What about our arrangements with Prince Christian?" cried the Consort excitedly.

"The Queen will act as set forth," replied her Majesty coldly—"her mind is made up. The young woman is understood to be with child by the heir to the throne. It devolves, therefore, upon the monarch that the affair comes off decently and without scandal. Windsor," added her Majesty with a complacent smile, "is vast enough to hide a hundred State secrets."

"*Mein liebes Fraüchen,* I am sure, will arrange everything for the best," said the Prince-Consort, who seemed dazed by her Majesty's air of self-sufficiency, "yet I confess not to fully comprehend the line of action your Majesty has resolved upon."

At this point the Queen's sincere affection for her Consort mastered her wish to pose as sovereign even in family affairs.

"My dear Albert," she said, relenting, "we will talk about details after measures to end an intolerable and scandalous situation are under way of execution. While you repair to the War Office, I will settle things with the Lord Chancellor and prepare my letter to the Duchess. When our people are *en route* for Ireland, we will take advice as to the next thing to be done."

"By the way," she added abruptly, "do not fail to instruct your secretary to send the answer to Prince Christian's letter, received this morning by the ordinary mail. While my trust in the Queen's messengers is unshaken, I think it hardly advisable to send one to Denmark just now."

"But, my dear Victoria, if you enjoin the utmost secrecy, no matter what the provocation, the officer will be in honor bound——"

"There you are again," interrupted the Queen, "making confidants of people, taking risks when there is not the slightest need. 'German sentimentality run riot,' as one of the papers put it recently."

"No, no," she went on, observing that her Consort's face flushed with anger and humiliation,

"let me finish, sir, I command you. Understand," she continued in a hard, business-like tone, "that suppression of the facts is our only safety. As far as I can gather, fully fifty persons have knowledge of the marriage outside of Lady Mary's family, some knowing more, some less, others being mere guessers. Our interests demand that we placate them, one and all, *i.e.*, pay them for being discreet if necessary. Pshaw!"—this with a contemptuous shrug of her ample shoulders—"I expect to confer a considerable number of titles to make their bearers behave like gentlemen. I will let down the bars even for authors and journalists, if it must be."

The Queen lowered her voice to a confidential whisper. "If we succeed in putting a premium on silence, the affair will soon blow over," she said, "while to tolerate or encourage gossip about the marriage, in any form whatever, would magnify Bertie's escapade into a grave affair of State. This is my reason for not allowing a Queen's messenger to go to Denmark. Possibly Christian heard some vague reports, and you know him and the Princess Louise for astute cross-examiners. If from one of our own people they obtained but the flimsiest sort of admission, why, their political demands would become insupportable overnight. They would not hesitate a moment to ask us to go to war with Prussia and Austria to compel these powers to recognize the Protocol." (Her Majesty referred to the London Protocol of May, 1852, by which Prince Christian was recognized as heir in Denmark, including Schleswig-Holstein,

by all the great powers except the Diets of the Elbe Duchies.)

The Prince bent low over his wife's chair and carried her hand to his lips. "If Lord Palmerston was as clever a politician as my wife," he said gallantly, "neither the Eastern question nor the Holy Alliance would keep him awake nights."

"You flatterer," said the Queen, while a broad smile of satisfaction stole over her face; "but now to work. We have kept the Lord Chancellor's aide waiting long enough, and the War Office must be getting impatient, as the secretary expected you half an hour before this."

CHAPTER VI

EARLY IMPRESSIONS

If there is in this world a case in which greatly wronged innocence was fully sensible of the wrong inflicted, and suffered the tortures of cruel injustice from infancy, mine is that case. In any event, I pray God that if others have been subjected to similar injustice they may have been spared the knowledge of the extent of such injustice.

From information given to me in childhood and which has been corroborated in later life, I was committed to the care of a maid, Esther Norman, in infancy who was to treat me as her own son, on the understanding that I was never to be informed of my true parentage.

This plan, I understand, was adopted by my grandmother, the late Queen Victoria, with a view to suppress all knowledge of the secret marriage of my father and mother and to protect my heart-broken mother from being made the subject of Court scandal.

That the outrage thus perpetrated against England's motherhood and against the state and nation utterly failed in its diabolical purpose is clearly proved.

In the first place the fact of the marriage of my father and mother was known to at least a number of persons; and the true love affair between the young couple was known throughout the Kingdom. Then came the reaction of my grief-stricken mother. Her grief over the double separation from husband and babe was uncontrollable; and, instead of resuming her place at Court, she became the object of pity of the nation and more particularly in the neighborhood of the castle in which she lived. Her only comfort was in being alone with her great sorrow; with Nature and with God. Her principal exercise for years, I have learned from an eye witness, was walking unattended in the castle grounds. The daily walks of this most beautiful lady naturally attracted attention and the people gave their sympathy, the sympathy of womanhood and of motherhood, to the royal lady who was known throughout the country as the "first love and bride of the Prince of Wales and the mother of the missing Prince John."

Robbed of her only child, the children of the village gave this poor mother much happiness. One of those children, now a woman of refined tastes, Miss Carmichael (Bonnie), whom I met in 1904 in San Francisco, California, related to me that she and many others had been in the habit of going to the castle "to admire the beautiful heart-broken lady" upon whom they all looked as "their ideal of a lady and a Princess." The lady, whose sorrow was known to the children, enjoyed their visits and found consolation in their presence.

Thus it proved that the attempt of the Sovereign to destroy the evidence of the love of a wife and mother was doomed from the inception of the plot to ignominious defeat. The nation knew the identity of my father's first love, but in loyalty to the Throne respected the wishes of the Sovereign and of my mother's family in sparing that wounded soul as much as possible from public gossip.

It was decreed by the Sovereign that I, the issue of the most romantic and, withal, the most tragic marriage of the first Prince of England in modern times, should be removed as far as possible from the environment and influence of the royal Court, in order that the characteristics of race transmitted to me by my parents might be obliterated if possible through confluence from infancy with influences and environments of an entirely different character.

My revered grandmother did not, I believe, have a more ardent admirer than myself of the wisdom and justice with which she so long ruled her vast Empire. My admiration for her, in later life, caused me to stifle the bitterness of feeling which I entertained toward her in my youth and early manhood, for her crime against my saintly mother. Her action, however, in making such disposition of an innocent infant as above stated, is one thing in her life that will remain with me to the day of my death as an illustration of the weakness of the sex. When actuated by jealousy, anger or desire for vengeance her good judgment forsakes her; discretion, logic and reason give

place to blind impulse sometimes dangerously near insanity. The injustice committed against me is not the matter to which I have reference; it is the outrage of which my grandmother was guilty against her own intelligence which I can not forget.

In her normal condition the Queen-mother would not have been guilty of committing such an inhuman crime against her son and his bride and their innocent child, much less would she have been guilty of anything so illogical as to suppose for a moment that the identity of the infant Prince of the House of Guelph could be obliterated by placing him in humble surroundings and calling him a laborer. As well might she have taken the foal of an Arabian thoroughbred and placed it on a farm and called it a cart-horse. The high pedigree of the racer would be the more striking by contrast.

The confusion of mind under which my grandmother acted in order to enforce ultimate obedience to her own plans relative to the matrimonial disposition of my father becomes more pronounced when the irregularity which marked the separation of my mother from her royal husband is considered. I am reliably informed that in order to suppress from the public the knowledge of the fact of the marriage of my parents, she omitted to issue a royal proclamation or to take the necessary legal action to annul their marriage. The attempt to thus "hush up" a legal ceremony has led to political complications now that the question has arisen concerning direct legitimate lineal succes-

sion to the throne. But upon that subject the writer has nothing to say, my only motive in alluding to the matter, as brought to my attention, being to show that my grandmother did not act with her usual good judgment in having disposed of my mother and myself in the manner in which she did.

Having been placed with a foster mother as an infant my memory does not serve to give the exact date. Esther Norman was commanded to have me baptised in the name of John, for the reason as I was informed in 1874, that the name of John in England was at that time distasteful to the Royal Family because of King John I, who signed the Magna Charta which gave to the people some liberty of conscience and a voice in the government of the realm. To the Imperialists this was an unpardonable offense.

It was, therefore, decreed by the autocracy that no other John should reign over Great Britain and Ireland lest a little more freedom should be given to the people.

The Royal Command to my foster-mother was not obeyed. In 1874, Esther Norman informed me that she had not carried out instructions given in reference to my baptism; that I had not in fact been christened at all, for the reason, as she stated, that, while she had consented to represent herself as being my mother, her conscience would not allow her to bear false witness in this respect in the Church and before God in a religious sacrament of such importance as the baptism of the first-born son of the heir apparent to the Throne of England.

I was, therefore, in the ridiculous position of having been confirmed by the Bishop of Lichfield, in the Cathedral of that city, 1874, without having been previously baptised, a fact which I only discovered subsequent to my confirmation.

As an infant I was placed with a nurse in Tonbridge, Kent, one Mrs. Nutley. My career was nearly brought to an abrupt and violent end before I could either walk or talk. A nurse girl, since married, named Mrs. Emma R. Curd, in company with some other tomboys of the neighborhood, climbed upon the railway wall near the Tonbridge station to watch the workmen employed on construction.

From the top of the wall to the tracks below is something like twelve feet or more; for some unexplained reason I was placed upon the wall and carelessly dropped by the nurse onto the tracks below. I sustained serious injuries from the fall, my head being injured by coming in contact with the rail, and by receiving a blow from the pick of a workman, who had it raised at the moment of my fall upon that spot.

The man, I was told, tried to prevent the pick from striking me, but his surprise was so great at my appearance there that he dropped the pick sidewise upon my head. In after years I was informed that I was taken up for dead, and that it was later thought for many weeks that I could not recover.

On the occasion of my last visit to London, a refugee from the San Francisco earthquake and fire, in 1906, I took occasion to hunt up the nurse,

Emma Curd. I found her still residing in the town of Tonbridge; her address at the time was 18 Priory Road, where I believe she is still living. Not having seen me for about forty years and having been informed that I had died many years ago, she was greatly shocked when I inquired if she remembered Johnny "Nutley" whom she had nursed as an infant.

Throwing up her hands she exclaimed: "Do I remember! Can I ever forget as long as I live how I dropped him from the top of the railway wall under the workman's pick, and we thought he was killed."

I then requested her to place her hand in the depression in my skull caused by that accident, which more than convinced her that I was the child whom she came so near to killing. Mrs. Curd can verify the above statement and furnish more particulars relating to that accident than I can give.

In 1907 I also traced the daughter of my old nurse, Emily Nutley—now Mrs.———— who also remembers the above accident. She remembered me very well and related many incidents of my childhood. She informed me that her mother had died four years previously, about 1903. She had also heard that I had been dead for many years.

The first act in my life of which I was told, is the first evidence I have to introduce to show that the plan to eradicate the traits and characteristics of race and parentage by change of environment was doomed to failure. The incident occurred in Kent, the County Seat of my parental

great grandmother, the Duchess of Kent. My age at the time can be ascertained by inference; I do not remember it. My foster-mother had just arrived from London; I was on the floor. With all the instinct of motherhood at her command, she approached me with outstretched arms and maternal solicitude for the purpose of taking me in her arms. "Come to mamma, baby, come to mamma!" resulted in such a manifestation of outraged dignity that they who witnessed it repeatedly reminded me of it for many years. I stormed at her as only injured innocence can storm. Every spark of energy in my being was brought into operation in violent protest against the claim to maternal relationship. Finally, rather than submit to dishonorable surrender I entrenched myself under a large arm chair and continued an uninterrupted fire of shrapnel, "not mamma, not mamma!" until the false position of motherhood was no longer tenable.

Had it not been for the fact, as above stated, that this incident was frequently related to me in following years I would in all probability have had no recollection of my first actual battle to protect my individuality.

It was the above incident which later led to my being informed of my parentage. The experience disconcerted my foster-mother and caused her to reflect upon her position and my possible future. Indeed, I have reason to believe that the denial of her claim of maternal relationship to me, from the lips of an innocent and much wronged infant, was largely responsible for the impressive lessons

which I received from her during my childhood and early youth and which have been my inspiration in the carrying out of all my objects and purposes in life.

CHAPTER VII

EARLIEST RECOLLECTIONS. I SNUB MY GRANDMOTHER THE QUEEN—I DECLARE A HOLY WAR

I HAVE now to relate the first incident of which I have actual recollection in my life.

Here I am again face to face with the experiences of my childhood, of my youth, of my life—a horrid nightmare of mental anguish and torture of my soul, which seems as though it would cause my heart to break, and convulses my very manhood with emotion that will not be silenced.

I would to God that I had not been born, or, that having been born, that my life had been mercifully destroyed ere I saw the light of day. The people of England can not conceive of the anguish of my soul. I have passed through the temples and pagodas in India and have actually envied the lepers their lot as they sat begging on the steps of the sacred shrine. I have bathed and dressed the leprous sores and mutilated limbs from which toes had been eaten away by that most loathsome of diseases, and have wished the while that I could have changed places with one of them, until checked by the selfishness of the thought, as I would not willingly see a pariah dog endure the

life that had fallen to my lot. My duty to God and to humanity demands the suppression of the emotions and of sentiment. I must go on.

The spirit of England's outraged motherhood, and the spirit of tortured innocence for forty-nine years stifled by the agonizing grief of broken hearts burst the bonds of injustice with the cry

Dieu et mon droit
and
May God Defend the Right.

As I look across the broad expanse of the Atlantic Ocean and see the *Royal Standard* floating to the breeze from the tower of Buckingham Palace and flashing in the sunlight the royal motto of the Sovereign, and of Englands greatness, I can not but reiterate the prayer,

May God Defend the Right.

And, yet, again, as conveyed in an anniversary greeting to my father; that the prayer of the son might be the prayer of the father to mingle at the throne of the King of Kings:

"Give the King Thy judgment, O God, and Thy righteousness to the King's son; He shall judge Thy people with righteousness and Thy poor with judgment."

The voice of the people is the voice of God. Let the people of my beloved England and Ireland, of Scotland and Wales, of the British Colonies and Dominions, the people of long-suffering India, the

land in which I spent so many years of my voluntary exile that I might be permitted to emancipate them from the horrors of famine and pestilence, the people of Europe, and of America, the great republic of the United States under the courteous protection of which I have sought seclusion and peace, if that be possible, from the relentless grief of my mother's and my own secret sorrow, read the narrative of my life, of my experiences, and of my unutterable sufferings, the faint tracing of which may be seen in crimson stains between the lines of these pages.

Let the whole world read and suspend its judgment until after mature deliberation as to whether it is possible that the fruits of my life's work are calculated to promote the cause of universal peace and of prosperity. If that be the verdict of the people, what I have to give, I am prepared to give freely. I ask no reward, I covet no honor, my motive in life is, as explained, for God and humanity.

The experiences which I am about to relate are responsible for the course which I have pursued in life; without the inspiration which impelled me to further action I could not have lived and, in spite of all inspiration, the yearning of my soul to bring honor to my mother, and the motive which prompted me to serve suffering humanity, no man ever courted death so long and so earnestly as did the subject of this biography.

The memory of the first incident has recurred to me many million times in the past forty-four or forty-five years, but never has the prophetic sig-

nificance of divine retribution attached to it ever occurred to me with the force with which it is now impressed upon me. Let the reader bear in mind that the incident referred to was the first experience in my life of which I have any absolute recollection.

The town of Tonbridge was one day *en fête* about the year 1864-5 (the date can be determined and the story verified by investigation) the royal train in which Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria was traveling was to stop at Tonbridge station. The town's people, young and old, in gala attire, turned out *en masse* in evidence of their loyalty. There was great excitement in the family of my old nurse, as indeed there was throughout the town.

I was about three or four years of age at the time. My old nurse, who had carefully prepared my best frock and other articles of my juvenile wardrobe, called me to be washed and dressed to "go to see the great lady, the Queen, who lives in the big palace in London." Then came the startling revelation which pierced the heart of the child through and through, the revelation which has caused me more anguish of heart than anything and everything else in life. "The great lady, the Queen, is Johnny's grandma. "Poor Johnny can't live in the big palace in London like grandma." Childish questions elicited the information that "Johnny's grandma is the Queen of England"; that "Grandma does not love Johnny's mamma"; "Johnny's grandma was very angry with Johnny's mamma and papa and would not let

mamma live in the palace"; and that "Grandma sent Johnny away from the palace and from his papa and mamma to live with nurse."

My nurse was surprised at the effect produced by her story upon my young mind. She had thought that I would have been pleased to go to the station to see "the great lady," my "grandma, the Queen." I pondered over the disclosure made to me which made a deep impression upon me. I refused to go to see the Queen. She had been angry and cruel to my mamma. She had sent my mamma away from the big palace in London. She had taken me from my poor mamma, and had sent me to that place so that my mamma should not find me. I did not cry. I did not make a scene. I decided that I did not love my grandma, and walked into the street that I might be alone with my first great grief which has never been lifted from my weary soul in all my wanderings.

The populace began to throng to the station hours before the time for the arrival of the royal train. The houses in the street in which I lived were soon deserted, and the throngs of people passing down the street from outlying districts diminished until only stragglers passed by. At this stage I became the center of public interest. Many ladies expressed surprise at my having been left unattended; and many stopped to speak to me about the "great lady, the Queen"; and not a few endeavored to persuade me to go with them to see the Queen, feeling that I ought not to be left alone on the street, promising to take care of me and to bring me back safely to "mamma."

How many times in life have I recalled those terrible hours and thought of the solicitude of those good people, and wondered what they would have thought could I but have told them the pain that their kindness and sympathy caused me. How the oft-repeated question of "Where is your mamma?" stabbed my young heart until my grief became unendurable. Finally I was alone, except for the vast concourse of people which I could see in the distance and the hum of thousands of voices faintly heard.

I was alone. The multitude might have been off the earth, and I in the lonely wastes of a vast desert. The solitude and desolation that overwhelmed my childish heart is beyond the power of expression in cold hard-steel type, beyond the power of expression in words of the most sympathetic soul that ever breathed, beyond the power of expression in the heart-broken sobs by which I am convulsed at the recollection of that agonizing experience after the lapse of over twoscore years. By the language of silence—the cry of the soul to the Almighty Father alone can expression be given to the great and terrible grief wrought by that awful experience—and the Almighty Father alone can conceive of the enormity of the suffering of my soul at that hour, and through the long secret sorrow of my life.

The foregoing incident awakened within my childish heart a sense of righteous indignation which changed the innocent child of four years into a being of more mature age. The problem of my life weighed heavily upon me, and serious

thoughts of the ways and means whereby I could right the wrongs of my mamma, were she still alive, took the place of play. I went every day to the churchyard a short distance from the house in which I lived, and spent much time under the shadow of the church and in walking among the graves. I felt that the church was the House of God; that God was my heavenly Father; and that my one great need was a Father's love and a Father's protecting care. The graves represented to me the resting place of the bodies of the people who had died and gone to heaven; and I thought that God was there and watched over the graves. In short, the churchyard was to me as holy ground in which I could walk and talk with God, my Father. I used to ask God to bring my mamma to me; then, as time passed and she did not come, I thought that she must have died and gone to heaven; so I asked God many times every day to take me to my mamma. I spent much time in searching for her grave in that city of the dead, that I might lie down upon it and die that I could be with her, for life without her was too terrible to me after I had heard that my grandmamma had sent her away from the big palace in London. I thought of her as being very unhappy, if she was alive, and that she was always crying for me.

After many weeks of vain search for my mother's grave I concluded that she was not dead. I did not think that God would let her die far away from me, but that He would bring her there if she died. I felt that God called to me to avenge my mother's wrong. I felt that I must go out into the

world, to the big city of London to find her, to fight for her and to make her happy. I would go to the big palace and see my grandmamma, and make her tell me where to find my mamma; and, if she would not tell me I would blow up her big palace and everybody in it.

I nursed my childish grief alone, for there was no friend to share it with me. The world had been cruel to me and to my mother and I resolved that I would submit to no more injustice with impunity, but that I would fight for my mamma that she might be taken back to the big palace where she belonged, as I had been told. I did not mind being punished when I was disobedient, but to submit to unjust punishment only to be kept from my mamma was another matter.

I had not long to wait for an opportunity to put my childish resolution into execution. My old nurse frequently found errands for me to do, which made me late in my attendance at the public school. The master had reprimanded me a number of times for my want of punctuality, notwithstanding that my nurse was responsible for my irregular attendance. One afternoon I went to school some fifteen minutes late, taking with me the usual note of "excuse"; on presenting it to the master he threw it away and said he would make an example of me; I should receive twelve lashes of the cane, six in each hand. I was made to stand for some time before the class as an example and in anticipation of punishment. I took the thrashing philosophically; but when it was over I decided to put my resolution to avenge my

wrongs into practice. A few seconds after the punishment had been inflicted, my nurse came into the school hoping to save me from such unjust treatment; a loyal friend had run from the school to apprise her of my plight. I was taken home by the nurse, who dressed my welted hands. That done, I begged permission to go out, a request that was granted under the circumstances. I lost no time in arranging my plans to avenge this latest outrage on innocent childhood; I was at that time still in frocks. I went to the room of a son of the house, whom I knew had a gun and sometimes went shooting. In a drawer I found a flask of powder, which I promptly appropriated. My plan of attack having been decided upon, I proceeded to carry it out. I went to the school yard, and having located the position occupied by the master's desk, which was near the wall in the centre of the building, I dug a hole in the ground to the depth of two bricks with an old knife brought for the purpose. I then charged my mine with the powder from the flask, set the fuse which I had prepared from darning cotton, and filled in the mine with the earth previously removed. I then waited to hear the master's voice from his desk; the moment came at last; I fired the mine by setting a light to the fuse, and took shelter in the gateway across the square, waiting patiently to see the school blow up, my thoughts being busy in the meantime planning a similar fate for the big palace in London.

After what seemed an hour, the mine exploded with a sh— sort of sound, gravel, dust, and smoke went up in the air, but much to my disgust the ex-

plosion had failed in its purpose—the schaol still stood as ugly as ever.

The dismal failure of my well-conceived plan to begin a holy war against those who had been guilty of gross injustice to my dear mamma and myself led me to the conclusion that I was not quite big enough to carry out such a campaign by myself. Profiting by my experience, I assumed the rôle of leader among the boys, organized my army corps, and thus acquired my first training as a field-marshal.

The next incident within my recollection and which created great excitement among the women present, occurred when I was about five years of age. Two ladies came down from London to see me. On the way from the railway station to the house of my nurse they saw a number of children playing soldiers; they had no difficulty in recognizing in the youthful commander of the party storming the citadel, the child whom they had come to see, although neither of them had seen me before.

Upon their arrival at the nurse's home, I was sent for to be presented to the ladies. On entering the house I firmly refused to meet the ladies until I had been made presentable by the removal of all the traces of my recent military expedition. My shoes had to be cleaned, face and hands washed, hair curled, and my robes of state donned in honor of my fair guests. I had not seen the ladies, and wondered if it were possible that my mamma was one of the party. I was anxious to find out, but

etiquette demanded of a gentleman that he must be properly groomed to receive company.

My action in this matter caused considerable comment, which was continued for some years. Being so particular in the matter of one's toilet was "an unmistakable mark of high birth." "Blood will tell," I well remember having heard repeatedly in the discussions over such trifling incidents of my childhood. "They may place the children of royalty and nobility out to nurse, but they can't rob the innocent babes of the blue blood in their veins and of their high-bred manners." "You can't make a commoner out of a child who was born a prince."

CHAPTER VIII

A PATHETIC MEETING—FRUITS OF SCARLET SIN OF ROYAL COURT VISITED ON SECOND AND THIRD GENERATIONS—WHY KING SOLOMON WAS FAVORED BY GOD

When about five years of age I was removed from Tonbridge to Snodland, Kent, where I was placed with a married sister of my foster-mother, a Mrs. William Diprose. It was while living with this family that my foster-mother took me to Malling for the ostensible purpose of paying a visit to "a lady friend," but whom I discovered was my own mother. "Her friend," she said, had expressed a desire to see John, and that she wished me to accompany her when making the call. Unusual care was bestowed upon my toilet before setting out for our destination. When *en route* my foster-mother appeared to be nervous and excited; she frequently readjusted my collar and groomed me down. On arrival at the house at which her friend was calling, the final touch was given to my toilet; we were then shown up to the drawing-room. I had expected that my foster-mother would have entered the drawing-room to greet her lady friend and then to have introduced me; instead of

which she placed me in front of her, laying her two hands against my arms, gently pushed me forward into the drawing-room, remaining meanwhile in the doorway. A number of ladies who had risen from their chairs as I entered the room, stood seemingly at a loss as to what to do. One lady who had approached the door as I entered placed her hand on my arm and greeted me in a kindly manner, to which I responded quietly. My attention was on the ladies further in the room. My gaze scanned the face of each lady from left to right of the room until in the center of the party my eyes looked for a second into the eyes of a lady, eyes which spoke to mine as the eyes of a tender, long-suffering love only can speak. Simultaneously each bounded toward the other, drawn by the irresistible law of love. In the center of the drawing-room my mother lifted me up in her arms and embraced me as I was never embraced before or since. The memory of my mother's heart-breaking sobs is too sacred to admit of publication to an unsympathetic public. I offer no apology for drawing the curtain upon what was at once the happiest and the most bitter moment of my life. I refer to it only to record the deep effect which the bitter anguish of my mother's heart produced upon me; and that the world may have at least some conception of the great grief of my much wronged mother.

While my mother was holding me tightly to her bosom, in a paroxysm of grief, I was greatly distressed at the evident anguish and bitterness of her soul.

One of the ladies present eventually came quietly forward and placing her arms about my mother endeavored to console her. With a last shower of kisses sealed with tears of a broken heart my mother put me down. I stood for a moment as she was led to a chair. I then said, "Good-bye." Bowing myself out of the room, I resolved, as I was leaving, that I would never pain her again with my presence, until I had avenged her wrongs, by the achievement of some great work, through my own personal effort, for the good of the nation, in recognition of which my country would be bound to honour her, as is her right before God and man.

At that early age my life was full of sorrow, I had been subjected to unkind treatment from the time of my birth, as I understand that I was taken from my mother very shortly after I first saw the light. I was certainly subjected to unkind treatment from the time I can remember up to the time of my removal. My soul yearned for my mother, for a mother's love and a mother's care. The affection bestowed upon other children by their parents tended to make my life the more lonely.

I know of nothing in life that produces in all the intensity of which it is possible to conceive the anguish and bitterness of heart which may be described as an aching void, as the loss of a mother's love and a father's care, under circumstances such as those by which I lost my parents, unless, indeed, it be the grief of a distracted mother robbed of her child. Under natural conditions or causes such as the removal of parents or children by death we become reconciled to the

loss, knowing that our loss is their gain, and do not suffer as keenly through such bereavement as when the thought is constantly before the mind that mother and father have been cruelly separated from each other and from their innocent and helpless infant under the most distressing circumstances; and, that that mother is grieving as only a mother can grieve under the burden of such a terrible and unjust fate; and, that a barbarous custom of royalty renders the father helpless to protect either one of his loved ones,—the so-called royal custom of morganatic marriage—the scarlet sin of royal courts and the plague-spot of the Christian world in this twentieth century of boasted civilization and hypocritical profession of Christianity. A so-called law which presumes to make null and void the law of Almighty God in the divine institution of holy matrimony when solemnized without the sanction of the earthly sovereign.

When it is remembered that in lands called "heathen," the "ignorant," "superstitious," and "barbarous" people whom we unjustly condemn as being ignorant of the true God and true religion (such is our own misconception of God and religion), treat all matters relating to private life with a reverence and sanctity that reduces the standard of life in Christian nations below the lowest of the brute creation in comparison. Let the reader put himself or herself in the place of the writer, not that I would have them experience the torture of heart and mind endured by me for forty-nine years, but to take a sweeping sketch of

an infinitesimal portion of the multitude of the trials, sorrows, and experiences of that period; and then, dear reader, imagine, if you can, what it must have been to have had this horrible living picture of a greatly wronged mother constantly before the mind for over forty years.

Let us visit for a brief space the continent of Asia, the land from which the first dawn of civilization broke upon us. It is well known that among the peoples of that continent a plurality of wives has been the custom from the most ancient time. The children of kings by plural wives are treated as royal princes, and in every way enjoy the rights and privileges appertaining to birthright. The same thing is true of the offspring of all classes of people. Not only are the children of plural wives thus sacredly honoured and protected, but the same is true of the natural offspring of concubines or mistresses; and why should it not be so? Shall the law of God be set at naught by an adulterous and hypocritical twentieth century Christian community by shirking the responsibility of parentage, and laying claim to virtues which it does not possess?

Let us recall to mind the published statement by which it was said that the late Queen Victoria traced the genealogy of the Royal Family of England to the House of David. Without commenting upon the private life, or, in modern phraseology, the morality of King David, it may not be out of place to remember that the lineal descendant of that King who succeeded to the throne, and whom God abundantly blessed with

wisdom, wealth and power far transcending the glory of any other monarch in history, enjoyed the happiness of having three hundred wives and seven hundred concubines, not to speak of the Queen of Sheba and other beauties not included in the royal household. It is significant that the biblical historian in writing the inspired word of God did not hesitate to record without comment or qualification the fact that the number of King Solomon's concubines was two and one-third times greater than the number of his wives. Evidently no disgrace in the sight of God that King Solomon had seven hundred concubines in addition to his three hundred wives. The reason that King Solomon thus enjoyed God's favor was because he was not guilty of the crime of repudiating his wives or of casting off his offspring.

If the geneaology of the present reigning dynasty of Abyssinia is to be accepted, Emperor Menelick is the direct descendant of King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba. The Emperor of Abyssinia is not, therefore, so far removed in relationship with the British royal family as the latter is removed from the moral and sacred responsibility of parentage to legitimate offspring, when such offspring is the issue of a marriage contracted by a royal prince contrary to the whim or fancy of the reigning sovereign. The moral responsibility of parentage, whether the offspring be by plural wives or concubines is still religiously observed in other branches of our family, branches not yet corrupted by the influences of modern civilization and idolatry. The idol of self-right-

eousness attributed by the Lord Jesus Christ to the Scribes and Pharisees has been so perfected by the embellishments of modern social etiquette and a false conventionality that the first century hypocrisy so condemned by Jesus Christ becomes devout piety in this twentieth century.

We will now examine briefly the modern genealogical history of the House of Guelph.

King William I, more generally known as William the Conqueror, it is recorded is the progenitor of the Royal Family of Great Britain, for the reason that the Norman invader, having been proclaimed King after the conquest of England, became the first sovereign of the Norman line; but, presumably, for the more convenient reason that King William I, the progenitor of the British Royal Family, was the natural son of Robert II, Duke of Normandy, by Herleva, a tanner's daughter.

The fact that the Conqueror was the illegitimate offspring of a foreign nobleman is somewhat awkward to record in plain English, but is most gracefully presented in the symbols of heraldry. It is worthy of note that the illegitimacy of William I of England and the fact that his mother was of plebian birth did not debar him from the rights of recognition as a nobleman, from the rights of conquest, or from being proclaimed the King of England.

My mother's ancestors, who came in the train of William the Conqueror, were of equally noble lineage as that of the Conqueror's father, and had

no such record of illegitimacy as in the case of their Royal Commander.

The history of England is blurred by the record of bloody crimes against members of the Royal Family, and by the shadow of still darker deeds recorded only in the "Great Book" of the King of Kings.

The crimes of Henry VIII in disposing of his wives by divorce and by execution were acts of justice and mercy when considered in the light of the inhuman treatment meted out to my dear mother, who was torn from the arms of her husband without cause and without any pretense of legal process. The only effort made was to suppress the knowledge of her marriage from the public.

The various consorts of King Henry VIII were at least accorded the honor due to their high station while it lasted; and they were finally removed by some show of legal formality; their children were, moreover, recognized as princes of the blood royal, and were decorated accordingly with princely honours.

In the case of Henry VIII it must have been apparent that the disposition made by him of his first and second consorts revealed the true character of the man, and that each succeeded consort went to her fate with her eyes more widely open to the probability of her doom than her predecessor had done.

Let my readers now consider for a moment the case of my own father, who, as it is well known, loved and loved deeply and truly the first and

only bride of his choice. That that love was a sacred and undying love in the heart of the young prince is known by those who read the handwriting on the wall, described by the late Prince Consort as "a trying time for the Royal Family at home" in the summer of 1860, when the Prince of Wales was sent to Canada; and by those who have knowledge of the domestic infelicity which marked the Royal Household from the year 1863.

That that first love, the cruel wrecking of which wrecked the life of my father, was reciprocated by the bride of his choice, was generally known to the older generation and to their own generation throughout the United Kingdom and Europe. Public sympathy has been with the greatly wronged Princess Consort in her unceasing bitterness of life during the past forty-nine years of her voluntary exile.

In justice to the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and to the honor of the Empire, I am happy to record that the barbarous morganatic marriage custom, which applies to some countries on the continent of Europe, does not apply to the Royal Family of England.

There is, therefore, no reason why the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and of the possessions beyond the seas should countenance or tolerate the practice of bigamy or the repudiation of lawful wives and the disfranchisement or disinheritance of legitimate offspring by Princes or by Sovereign of the British Empire, a practice which is not only repugnant to the tenets of the Christian Faith, of which the

Sovereign is the "Defender," and revolting to every moral sentiment, but which is abhorred as a barbarous and inhuman custom by the vast majority of the subjects of the great British Empire, whom a self-righteous and bigoted Christian community are pleased to term "heathen,"—our loyal and faithful subjects of the Empire of India!

What shall we say of the Christians of the British Empire if they longer countenance or tolerate the scarlet sin of royal polygamy by princes of the Reigning House, a sin which is abhorred by their three hundred million fellow subjects,—Mohammedan, Buddhist, Hindu and Zoroastrian?

What shall we say of the Christians of the British Empire if they fail to demand justice for the disfranchised eldest legitimate son and heir of their late Sovereign, His Majesty King Edward VII, the Prince John Rex et Imperator de jure?

CHAPTER IX

A SERIES OF AMUSING AND PAINFUL INCIDENTS— I REMOVE TO LICHFIELD, STAFFORDSHIRE

After about a year in Snodland, I was again returned to the tender care of Mrs. Nutley, in Tonbridge, where I remained until I was about eight years of age.

It was during my second residence in Tonbridge that I was once more reported dead. I had gone in company with another boy to a pond called Osborn's Pit. An attempt to wade through eighteen feet of water proving futile, my companion waited until he saw me disappear below the surface of the water and then ran away and reported me drowned. A searching party went out and dragged the pit from about 12 o'clock noon until the next morning; Mrs. Nutley, her two sons, William and David, and her daughter Emily with Emma Curd returned home about 3.30 A. M. Mrs. Nutley came into my bedroom wailing frantically and threw herself upon her knees by my bed, crying out, "What will become of me! My poor Johnny, the dear child, is dead."

The girls came into the bedroom to take Mrs. Nutley away when the trio screamed in chorus— "Why there is Johnny in bed."

She eventually somewhat recovered her composure, only to promptly faint on discovering me in bed.

I distinctly remember the look of horror on my companion's face, a boy about my own age, Ted Saxby, as he turned and fled from the scene as my face once more came to the surface. I managed to clutch some briars that were running from the bank some distance into the water and drew myself ashore. I do not remember just how long I was lying at the foot of the steep bank, as I lost consciousness. Upon recovering consciousness I crawled up to the top of the bank where I found my shoes and socks, but my companion was nowhere in sight. I called, but there was no response.

I left the scene and went into a neighboring hay-field, where hay-making was going on, and rolled in the hay as a means to recuperate from the effects of the dipping and at the same time to dry my clothes. Not caring to venture home, as I was supposed to be drowned, I remained with the hay-makers until they left off work in the evening. The hay-makers adjourned to a public house on leaving the field and invited me to accompany them, an invitation which I readily accepted, as it afforded me the time necessary to wait for the people to go to bed before I would venture home. We remained in the tap-room drinking beer and amusing ourselves by shooting out the gas at which sport I became quite proficient before leaving the "pub" at "turning out time."

I was at that time about seven years of age,

and afforded the hay-makers much amusement by my marksmanship with the gun in shooting out the gas every time I fired.

I then paraded the church yard for an hour or more thinking it still too early for the folks at home to be asleep. Some time after midnight I made my way through the kitchen window to bed, thinking myself very clever in having got in without arousing any one from their slumbers.

It transpired, as stated above, that the people were not asleep but still dragging the pit a few miles away.

It was not long after the drowning accident that I was finally removed from Tonbridge to return to Snodland. In 1869 Mrs. Diprose, my nurse, died. A peculiar circumstance in connection with her death and illness may be related in the interest of psychologists:

I knew, of course, that "Aunty" (as I was taught to call her) was ill. I did not, however, know the nature of her illness. The small thatched house, in which we were living in this village was of the old fashioned kind with diamond shaped window-panes, having a very fine grape vine spread over the back and side walls. The stairway was situated in the kitchen with a door at the bottom which was kept closed.

One morning I was sitting in the old arm-chair by the fire-place and facing the stairway door. By the side of the door stood an old "Grandfather's" clock which had done service for generations. The clock gave the warning to strike the hour of 10 A. M.; at the same moment the stair

door was opened by Elizabeth, the fourth of the seven daughters of Mrs. Diprose, who had just come down from her mother's room. As the door opened I looked up at Elizabeth and before she could step from the lower steps to the floor, I burst into tears.

Elizabeth, surprised at this sudden and unexpected outburst, said, "Whatever is the matter, Johnny?" Pointing to the clock, I said, "Aunty is dying."

Elizabeth replied, "No, no, mother is not dying. She is much better this morning. You must not cry."

I protested, saying that her mother would die when the clock struck 10.

Elizabeth replied, "Nonsense, I have just raised mother up in bed. She is quite easy."

Pointing to the clock, I said, "When the clock gave warning to strike something told me that Aunty will die as the clock strikes ten."

The girl, terror-stricken at my emotion and the manner in which I had informed her of my premonition, turned and ran upstairs; she arrived at her mother's bedside just in time to support her mother on her arms as she sank back dead as the clock was striking the hour.

On my return to England from India in 1894, I looked up the Diprose family and found Elizabeth the happy mother of a number of children living at Lamberhurst in Kent. I asked her if she remembered the incident above related, in order to satisfy myself that it was not an imagina-

tion conjured up in childhood and exaggerated by reflection in after life.

Elizabeth informed me that she remembered the incident perfectly well and had often wondered how the premonition of her mother's death came to me in such a remarkable manner.

I may relate an amusing incident which occurred during my last sojourn with the Diproses. Mr. Diprose was working in the harvest field. I was sent to him on an errand and remained for some time playing about. The men struck work for dinner and invited me to join them in their repast.

This was no champagne banquet, but ale, bread and cheese and fat pork. Not being partial to either fat pork or cheese, strong enough to walk, the only thing on the bill-of-fare of which I would partake was the beer.

As the harvest field has a tendency to sharpen the appetite I partook somewhat heartily of the "Malt Extract." Some time after this repast "Uncle" Diprose suggested that I had better go home and requested me at the same time to take a large basket of potatoes which he had procured from the neighboring farm house. I proceeded on my homeward journey laboring under my double load of Malt Extract and potatoes. After having struggled along for some three-quarters of a mile over the stubble of the harvested wheat field, my course thence on for another mile lay between two stands of wheat; the path being about a foot wide at the base and very uncertain and uneven at the top;

nothing more or less than a rough ridge. I well remember the brave effort I made to maintain my balance on this razor-back ridge. In the evening of that day when "Uncle" William Diprose was wending his way homeward along this self-same path, he was startled to observe that somebody had been planting potatoes about one-half of the distance, but a greater surprise was in store for him on finding that the potato scattering terminated abruptly with about a peck and a half scattered in a small circle like a punctuation mark. He thought it a "full" stop and began to investigate. He found his potato basket lying upside down a few feet from the path, and a break in the wheat led him to believe that further investigation on his part would lead to some further discovery.

Some three or four yards further in the wheat he discovered me "dead to the world," the heat of the harvest field and alcoholic poisoning had rendered me unconscious. "Uncle" William placed me in his potato basket and carried me home and called in a doctor; restoratives were duly administered and I was not much the worse for my experience.

Having been very delicate as a child it was thought by my foster-mother that life on a farm would be beneficial to my health. During the two or three last years of my stay at Snodland I worked on the farm, but the long hours and insufficient rest tended to further impair rather than improve my health.

At the age of twelve it was decided that it was time for another change of scene. On

the 14th of February, 1873, I was, accordingly, sent as a novel valentine to a brother of my fostermother, a Mr. George Norman, of Lichfield, Staffordshire. I can not say that the idea of this change appealed to me in any way from the time it was suggested. Notwithstanding that it was not always pleasant to a child of eight to ten years of age to be routed out of bed at three o'clock every morning to trudge off two or three miles to commence his early labors of farm work by five A. M., and that this experience was the more difficult by reason of the fact that I was fully cognizant of my identity and that my proper place at such hours was to be snugly tucked away in a comfortable bed in a palace; I had adapted myself to the modest environments and had learned to love the girls of the family, as also their father.

I had a presentiment that the proposed change to Lichfield would not be agreeable to me.

Having been deprived of the love and care of my mother and father, it was hard to be repeatedly deprived of such affection as was accorded to me by the different families with which I was placed as a child only to go again among strangers.

On being sent to Lichfield I explained to my foster-mother and also to her brother that this life of being kicked about from "pillar to post," thus depriving me of any lasting human friendship, was too much for my sensitive nature, and that I intended henceforth to make my own way in the world.

I would go to work and earn my own living. While at that time I was obliged to live with my

guardian, I started to work at the Priory for Squire Brown. My work there was to take care of eight cows, assist in the dairy and incidentally in the stables.

I soon became expert in the task of milking my eight cows and quite enjoyed such good company. With the exception of a little red-and-white vixen the rest of the happy family bestowed upon me as great, if not greater, affection than I had received at the hands of any members of the human family.

On my first introduction to the red-and-white cow in question, I sought to gain her confidence by kindness and gentle treatment. It had been customary to strap her legs and bar her in during the process of milking. This treatment I condemned as cruelty to animals. Acting upon this conscientious conviction, I took my milk can and stool and, dispensing with the restraining straps and the rail, proceeded to milk my pet.

The freedom of action in her legs and body during the performance of this maternal function evidently took her by surprise, as some minutes elapsed before she availed herself of the privilege thus accorded her. In due time, however, she came to a full realization of her advantage and of the fool-hardiness of her latest "calf," and protested vigorously against the ribs of her innocent victim.

Possibly the only other evidence at present obtainable of that amusing incident would be the mark on the corner of the cow-shed against which my aerial flight was abruptly terminated, unless

Squire Brown, or some of the household can still be found to corroborate the story.

I was obliged to part from my pets after an acquaintance of only a few months in consequence of my health.

While strong and healthy as an infant, I was in very delicate health for many years after having been dumped over the railway wall in the first year of my existence. It was the opinion of medical men then that with my skull crushed in I could not live many months, and, as time went on they declared I could not be reared to the age of twelve years. It was not surprising, therefore, that I should have suffered from the effects of having been so nearly drowned.

I was quite ill for some time following this accident.

I suffered a good deal also with my eyes; the trouble being attributed to my having taken a severe cold through the ducking and remaining in my wet clothes.

This trouble with my eyes continued for some years. At the age of twelve, shortly after my change of residence and guardians, from Kent to Staffordshire, in the city of Lichfield, it was feared that I would lose my sight. I suffered from a very severe attack of ophthalmia.

I was placed under the treatment of a noted *Birmingham oculist, as an out-patient of the Birmingham Eye and Ear hospital.* I well remember my first visit to that institution. My condition was so serious that it was not deemed advisable that I should make this short journey of a couple of

hours by train in one day. I was accordingly sent to Walsall, only a few miles from Lichfield, one afternoon, where I was met by the late Sister Dora, who took me to the Cottage Hospital of which she had charge.

Sister Dora treated me with the kindness, gentleness and loving sympathy of a mother. I was in great agony from the pain in my eyes, but I felt that I could cheerfully suffer a great deal for the privilege of being for a few hours under the care of this saintly woman, who was my ideal of a ministering angel from the Almighty.

The following morning I was put on the train for Birmingham only a few miles distant from Walsall. On reaching that town I made my way unattended to the hospital. I will not torture my readers with the horrid details of the treatment or suffering I endured during the months that I attended that institution.

Suffice it to say that my case necessitated an increased supply of leeches to the hospital and that I furnished nourishment to a thousand and more of these blood suckers.

Seemingly fearful lest my blood supply should prove insufficient for the ever-increasing number of leeches to gorge themselves upon, the doctor filled me up with cod-liver oil to such an extent that I ultimately took to the sea.

Following the leeches the doctor, evidently bent upon increasing the mortality of the hospital, ran setons through my temples to keep up the suppuration, following this up with the probing of the eyes

and the application of poisons which only increased my suffering.

In later years I reflected with feelings of righteous indignation on this system of treatment and the painful difficulties under which I had to grope my way alone through the streets of a strange town from the hospital to the station, suffering unspeakable torture of both body and mind. The agony of one of the most painful afflictions of the body that it is possible to bear, and deprived of sight, a helpless boy of twelve years, I was buffeted about by the crowd and congested traffic in that busy manufacturing center of the "black" country. The torture of my body was, however, not to be compared with that of my mind which was overwhelmed with grief through the knowledge of my painful position: the grandson of the Queen of England, the first-born son of the Prince of Wales, Prince of the blood royal, deserted and cast adrift, blind and helpless to struggle alone through dangers that threatened my life at every step.

My mind at that time was pre-occupied with thoughts such as experienced by one at the point of death. Years of suffering had robbed me of the joys of childhood, my thoughts were those of a maturer being.

I was carried in thought to the palaces to see my royal grandmother, whom I could not help but despise; I could see my father and the woman who had displaced my own beautiful mother; I could see my half-brothers and sisters gamboling in luxury; I could see my broken-hearted mother

as she walked alone in the grounds of the old Scottish Castle where Queen Mary had spent much of her time. The only rift in the dark clouds of my suffering was the pleasure of meeting Sister Dora and the fond recollections of her loving sympathy and caress. A statue has been erected in Walsall to the memory of Sister Dora. It is the one statue in England which in my opinion should have been made of gold.

At the end of about six months' treatment the condition of my eyes was much worse than when I commenced treatment, and hopes of saving my sight had been despaired of. At this juncture I contemplated very seriously upon the prospects of my future life. Was it not enough that I had been cruelly cast adrift and that my mother was pining in solitude bereft of both her husband and child; must the greatest of all afflictions, blindness, be added to the already bitter cup of the un-Christian and barbarous acts of my Queen and grandmother? Hitherto, most of my time had been spent in a darkened room and under a large table with a spread reaching nearly to the floor to further protect my eyes from the little light that penetrated the humble apartment. The torture of mind and body, the gross injustice and neglect, at length became intolerable, and I sought the solitude of the fields, where I might be alone with my Heavenly Father. I spent many hours lying on the grass in deep meditation and prayer. I found that the soft green of the grass was more soothing to my eyes than was the darkness and impure atmosphere of my room.

One morning I threw myself upon the grass in a field in which I saw numerous plants having delicate bird's-eye flowers and small leaves of a dark, soft green.

Placing my face close to the plant, I soon observed that it produced a most soothing effect upon my eyes. I was immediately impressed to tear out the setons from my temples, to throw away my medicines and to substitute the treatment before me for the barbarous treatment which I had been undergoing. I tore the plants up by the roots, filled my pocket handkerchief and my pockets with them and returned home. I went to the kitchen, washed the plants thoroughly, put them into a saucepan with water and proceeded to brew my decoction, much to the amazement and alarm of Mrs. Norman, the wife of my guardian.

She remonstrated with me in vain: "You will blind yourself," she said. "You may poison yourself and die," and such like expostulations.

I replied that "Dr. Solomon, with all his wisdom, was certainly making me blind, and that he had expressed the opinion that I could not live." This I had overheard him tell my guardian.

I told her that I was not prepared to go through life blind; and that I intended to live to make a home for my mother, to show my grandmother that I did not want her support and that I could become a greater man without her aid than I would become if coddled up in the palace where I could learn nothing of the world.

When my guardian returned from work in the evening, I had already applied my home-made

"lotion" to my eyes several times with considerable benefit. He was dumbfounded when I told of my act, and inquired why I had torn the setons from my temples. I informed him that I had torn them with a single jerk instead of torturing myself morning and night to tear them out by degrees.

I further explained that I was not going to see Dr. Solomon again.

At bedtime I applied the leaves from my decoction as a poultice to my eyes. Each day I gathered a fresh supply and made a fresh decoction. After about a fortnight's treatment my eyes were strong and well.

I remember having heard my guardian, when speaking of this unusual experiment, remark that it was the most wonderful thing he had ever seen or heard of in all his travels during his twenty-one years' service in the army. He said: "Murder will out. They talk of the King's touch for the 'King's evil;' I do believe that this boy must have it in him or he would never have done such an extraordinary thing."

CHAPTER X

CHAFING UNDER THE INJUSTICE OF MY DISINHERITANCE AND RESTRAINT IN MY FALSE POSITION I THROW OFF THE YOKE AND GO INTO THE WORLD—A MAN AMONG MEN

It was in my thirteenth year that my foster-mother showed greater anxiety than usual over my refusal to study. She promised to give me, as pocket money, one guinea for each copy-book that I could fill in a year; and estimated that I ought to fill three or four books a week, and she had a gross of assorted books sent to me, in addition to books on arithmetic, history, geography, etc.

By way of encouragement she impressed upon me very seriously my duty as a Prince to qualify myself for the "exalted station to which my country would some day call me," and pointed out the advantages of the practical education possible to me.

Having already repudiated the miserable pittance allowed for my support and education, and having gone to work to earn my own living rather than accept their miserable "mess of pottage," I naturally failed to "bite at the cherry" offered me with the copy book.

Needless to say that at the end of the year I had not earned a single guinea by the art of the pen.

If I had the ability to earn my own living under circumstances so far removed from those to which I was born, i. e., in the stable and cow-shed, I concluded that I was also capable of exercising and developing the intelligence transmitted to me by my royal parents and long line of cultured ancestors.

My next position was with W. H. Tanner & Co., wholesale and retail grocers of Lichfield, where I became somewhat familiar with the art of the confectioner and the "counter-jumper."

I also had some experience of the business of the traveler, as it was my duty to drive out to all the neighboring towns with the traveling salesman several times a week.

Another position held in Lichfield was with William Norman, the wholesale draper.

My principal duty there was to attend in the shop; accompany the outside salesman three times a week on our various routes. There being nine different routes, we covered each route only once in three weeks, which made these trips more interesting than more frequent visits would have been, as our sweethearts in the various towns had time to feel our absence and, naturally, were always looking forward to our coming.

Still another experience was in the shop of Mr. Simpson the shoemaker, where I learned to both mend and make shoes, and, at the same time, developed athletic tendencies in the way of riding the "flying horse," the principal sport of the hard-working cobbler.

The novel sport of the "flying-horse" not be-

ing much understood by others than the members of our "fraternity," I may enlighten my readers on this exciting experience—the first time that the secret has been made public. The pedigree of the "flying-horse" can not be traced to the thoroughbred Arabian steed or to the English racer. It is a species peculiar to the steed of the shoemaker's shop.

To bring the "flying-horse" to perfection for animated action, two holes are bored in the seat of the cobbler's bench about an inch and one-half apart and a groove in the seat cut out from hole to hole large enough to admit of a strong waxed end operating without obstruction. A cobbler's needle of some three inches is then threaded with a waxed end of suitable length to reach around the room; the needle is then placed eye downward through one of the holes in the seat, the point being flush with the top. The other end of the thread is then passed along the groove and down through the opposite hole, passing, generally, from the back of the seat along by the wall like a telephone wire, but concealed. The end of the thread is within reach of the operator in some other part of the room. The whole staff, including employers and employees, having found some excuse for visiting the work room, the operator pulls the thread or bridle of the "flying-horse" with a jerk which springs the needle up the one hole penetrating the breech saddle of the novice rider, who in turn parts company with the needle by a dexterous vault into space. My experience in this feat broke the previous records of the sitting high-jump. By

the time he descends from the ceiling the "flying-horse" and its equipment have disappeared.

I next entered the railway service as a clerk, in 1874. I was at that time chafing under the restraint of my guardians and was consequently very unhappy for the reason, as some may understand, that where a child is under the guardianship of strangers the dutiful affection that would be natural from a child to its parents and *vice versa* is lacking.

I told my guardian on several occasions that I would not submit to this treatment but would start out into the world that I might enjoy the independence that one is entitled to in life.

My guardian expressed himself that it might do me good to have a taste of the world, but, that if I should leave his protection, he was sure that a few days' experience in the cold world would be quite enough to bring me back.

In the month of March, 1876, I told them one evening that I intended to leave the next day. The following day I left home without taking a change of linen or clothes or so much as a clean pocket handkerchief. I left in my office suit. I chose this course for the reason that I feared that if I took my belongings they would be apprehensive about me and think that I was going for good, which might be rather awkward.

I purchased a railway ticket to Birmingham and was seen to leave by train for that city. I had selected a compartment in which there was no other passenger. When the train was well out of Lichfield, I opened the door of the compart-

ment, stepped out onto the step, closed the door and dropped off of the rapidly moving train.

Picking myself up from the bottom of the bank, where I had rolled, I went across fields and finally struck the road leading to Derby and Nottingham. I walked to Derby that day and the following evening arrived at Nottingham with about two shillings in my pocket. I put up at a hotel on the station road, paying eighteen pence for my bed and four pence for a glass of beer and bread and cheese. My exchequer being now down to two-pence it was imperative that I obtain employment forthwith. I got up at 2.30 A. M. and by three o'clock was out looking for work. I found a coffee stand owned by a man named Jackson. He was blind. This poor fellow I learned had been a stocking maker and had lost his sight in the factory. He was a devout Methodist, and had his coffee stand to supply factory hands going to the factory in the early hours of the morning and the night shifts, etc. I thought that I would invest in a cup of coffee for a penny, which I did. The blind man treated me cordially and inquired if I did not want a bun also. I replied that I did not, that it was rather early for breakfast, and that I only wanted a cup of coffee.

He invited me to sit down in his coffee stand and insisted upon my having a bun with my coffee, refusing payment for the bun. The blind man knew every one of his customers, man, woman and child. He also knew that I was a stranger in that town. He inquired what I was doing out so early. I told him that I was out looking for work, at which

he smiled kindly, and said, "three o'clock in the morning is rather early to start out to look for work. It is useless for you to go to any place on that errand before eight or nine o'clock." He invited me to remain with him until that time and offered to go with me to see if he could help in securing me a place.

He said that he supposed that I had run away from home but that he did not wish to ask any questions about me or my people and would help me in any way possible. I accepted his invitation with thanks and at eight o'clock assisted in taking down the booth, packing away his coffee urns, etc., and wheeling the same to his house where I was introduced to his aged mother and invalid sisters, whom this poor blind man was supporting by his coffee stand. I was made quite at home by this good-hearted family and after breakfast started out in company with the blind man in quest of work. He suggested looking through the papers to see if I could find a congenial position advertised. I concluded that this would be a waste of time as any position that I might wish to apply for would require a character, which, under the circumstances, I could not produce. I explained to Mr. Jackson that I was half Irish and that like a certain Irishman I had once heard of, who, when being asked for his character, vainly searched his pockets and then innocently replied, "An', faith, sor, I have lost it." Mr. Jackson readily agreed with me that under the circumstances it would be advisable to apply for work in some of the factories, which we accordingly did. He led the way

to Cox's lace factory, the manager of which was a woman. Mr. Jackson went in and saw this good lady and commended me to her motherly sympathy. I was then called in and informed that I could have a position in the factory at fourteen shillings a week.

Being asked when I would like to commence, I replied "that I would start at once." I was accordingly introduced in the "drying room" and started to work. I boarded with the blind man and his family.

Work became short in the factory a few weeks later and as hands were out on half time I accordingly sought another position. Seeing a place advertised at Gilliver's Hotel and confectionery, I applied for the position, relying on my former experience in that line to favor me in my application. I got the job. Some three months later while out making the early morning purchase in meat, for pork pies, etc., I looked through the advertisements in the morning paper and saw a position advertised for a billiard marker in the Caledonia Hotel, ten shillings a week, board, lodging and washing. This was considerably better than the job I held. I called on my way back with my basket on my arm to apply in person for the position. The proprietor appeared to be amused and pleased with my timely appearance and smiled at the manner in which I had presented myself. He told me that I could have the position, providing my present employers would recommend me and that he wished me to start as early as possible. Needless to say the recommendation was all right and

that my employers were pleased to know that I had an opportunity to better myself, and said that I could go at once as the Caledonia was without a boy, but I declined to leave them until they had secured the services of another boy to take my place. This was readily done and I started upon my new position. I knew nothing about "grooming" billard tables, my work in that line having been with cows and horses. However, the billard tables were perfectly harmless and so I entered upon my task of brushing and ironing without fear. I enjoyed the work and also the pay and very soon became so proficient in that game that I seriously contemplated challenging the champion of England to a game of one-thousand up.

Some six months later another opening occurred for advancement which was at the Royal Hotel, just across the street from the Caledonia.

I secured the position and was doing very well. I had joined the Good Templars and otherwise tried to improve my time. Mr. Thomas Beckett, as the name implies, was a good Irishman, and all the employees of the hotel were Irish, with the exception of myself, who was taken for a full-blooded Englishman. Fear of betraying my identity caused me to suppress the real Irish part of my nature, which, however, would persist in bobbing up. There was one incident through which my Irish descent was nearly betrayed.

I was the youngest member of the staff, a delicate boy of fifteen and a half years. The head "Boots" was a big raw-boned fellow with the map of Ireland well defined on his features and the

ancient Gaelic infliction apparent in his every utterance.

One afternoon I ventured to play a practical joke upon him, which he resented. He turned upon me saying, "Ye spalpeen ye, I'll be afther boxing yer ears"—and, suiting the action to the word, raised his hand to carry out his purpose. Before he could get in the slap, he lost his own wits from the shock received from a lightning-like pummeling about his own sweet countenance and spare-ribs. Seizing a carving knife from the table he came after me to cut out my "English heart." Upon this demonstration of Irish hostility, I went at him in real earnest, declaring that I was a better Irishman than the whole d—d outfit of them. He went over the table, upset a few chairs and broke up the crockery and created such a racket in general that Beckett and the whole household rushed into the room to ascertain the cause of the tumult and dismantling of the kitchen.

When they saw the "Boots" kicking and squirming on the floor trying to free himself from the wreckage, and I standing over him promising to repeat the punishment if he did not behave himself, everybody roared at the ludicrous situation of the victorious youngster standing over the vanquished giant.

Some weeks after my arrival in Nottingham the Jacksons informed me that they had seen an advertisement in a newspaper about a boy of my age and description who had run away from home and that they were wondering if I was the boy.

I told them that there were many boys like me

and I had no doubt many had run away from home as I had done. I did not think that there was any one sufficiently interested in me to offer a reward for my return. On the contrary I thought that if my people got an inkling that I had any idea of returning they would be more likely to offer a reward for me to stay away. They decided that it was not worth while informing about me.

I was not to be allowed to remain long unmolested. I had been in Nottingham about eighteen months when one morning, as I was passing through the market place, I looked into a draper's shop and saw standing behind the counter and staring at me, a salesman who had been formerly employed at Norman's shop in Lichfield. Placing one hand upon the counter, he was over in a twinkling and making for the door. When he got outside I was nowhere to be seen. A fortnight later I was walking along the Trent side to take my morning dip. I had proceeded about a mile along the bank of the river when I saw my friend of the counter approaching from the opposite direction in company with a couple of friends. With a hedge on one side, the river on the other and no convenient corners to dodge around or alley-ways in which to lose myself as on the previous occasion, there was nothing for it but to face the music. When we met he asked me, "What are you doing here?"

I replied that I was about to take my morning's dip. He seemed annoyed and said sharply, "I mean, what are you doing in Nottingham?" to which I truthfully replied, "I am not in Notting-

ham." He then inquired if he had not seen me passing his shop in the market place a fortnight ago.

I told him that it was quite possible, as I came into Nottingham on market days. He informed me that he had telegraphed to my "uncle" at that time, who, he said, had been looking me up in Nottingham but having failed to trace me had returned home.

In reply to further inquiries made for the purpose of informing on me, I told him that I had been apprenticed to a carpenter in Beeston some three miles from Nottingham.

Taking in my dress, gold watch and chain and other articles of jewelry, he said, "You don't look much like a carpenter's apprentice. I am going direct to the telegraph office to wire for your 'uncle.'"

I told him that he might save himself the trouble and the other people the annoyance, as I was going off to the training ship that morning, having enlisted in the Marines. I turned up the lapel of my coat but failed to find the "ribbons" to corroborate my statement and explained that "I must have left them with the sergeant."

I informed him that my gala attire was my "Sunday best," donned in honor of my last day as a civilian.

This all seemed plausible enough, but he did not believe it and my pleasant life with the Beckett's and in Nottingham was destined to be cut short that evening. I was playing a billard match at the Royal in the early evening of that day, at the

conclusion of which I heard a familiar voice behind me, saying, "Well done, John! I did not know that you were a champion billiard player. But now this sort of game has to stop. You have to go home with me to-night. Why did you run away from Mr. Bradbury when he saw you pass by his shop a fortnight ago?"

I replied that "Not having seen Mr. Bradbury I did not run away from him. Possibly I was turning a corner at the time when he says he saw me, or, he may not have seen me at all. Had he seen me on the market place, it is strange that I should have vanished into thin air while he was getting to the door. As to returning home with you, I can not do so, for the reason that I am employed here, doing well and quite happy in my own way."

He said, "That has already been arranged. I have spoken to Mr. Beckett and explained to him that I am your lawful guardian and have come here to take you home. It is only left to you to put on your hat and say good-bye."

Finding that protestation was useless and that I must once more have my painful position forced upon me, a child without parents' love or care, robbed of my own home and of my rights as a legitimate child in a Christian nation, to be again obliged to become a wanderer on the face of the earth rather than return to environments which were so obnoxious to me, I invited my friends to a private room to take a light repast before leaving. I excused myself that I might go and pack my luggage. This I had the "Boots" place in a cab, and,

having wished the Becketts "good-bye," returned to the room to see how my guests were faring.

In reply to the question as to whether I was nearly ready, I explained that I was, and would now see that all my traps were brought down from my room. Closing the door and gently turning the key on the outside, I stepped into the waiting cab and drove with my luggage to the Lion Hotel.

I saw the "Boots" there and asked him to take care of my traps. I slept in his room that night, leaving town early the next morning, once more riding "Balaam's Ass" in preference to risking my precious body near any railway station to be unceremoniously packed off to Lichfield.

Having left all my baggage with the "Boots" at the Lion Hotel, I was once again out in the world without a change of garments. I went to Newark, and early the following morning I made my way towards London, not knowing what to do or where to be safe from molestation.

I made up my mind to go to the metropolis and try to locate my mother. I had proceeded only a few miles when I came across a gang of navvies working on a new railroad cutting. I stopped and watched the men at work for a few minutes. Here, I thought, was an opportunity for me to lose my identity and to safely evade, at least for some time, the search which I knew would be made for me.

Nobody would think of looking for me working as a "navvy" with pick and shovel in cutting out a roadbed.

I immediately inquired for the foreman and asked for the job. He looked me up and down with a broad grin, and then said, "Let me see them aristocratic hands of yours."

I turned them up for him to see, upon which he ejaculated, "I be d—d if they aren't as soft as silk! I know'd you hadn't done any hard work, but I be hanged if I thought ye had hands as soft as a lady's. I guess ye must need a job awful bad to want to tackle this. The pay is five 'bob' a day. You'll have to pay eighteen pence for the pick and shovel, but you can turn it in again when you leave the job and draw your money."

"Navvies," like convicts, are known by their numbers. I have never forgotten mine which was 509.

I at once started in to work and my appearance there, like a peacock among a flock of crows, gave cause for much amusement among those big, rough, good-natured fellows. The work was hard, it is true, and my hands at the end of the first day were not quite so much "like silk," for they were practically raw, blisters having formed and broken one after another, but I have never regretted that I worked for two days as a "navvy." The experience enabled me to understand that class of men in a manner that I never could have done by looking on from a royal palace or state-coach. The favorable impression made upon me by that "happy-go-lucky crew" was such that I am always ready to give the "navvy" a hearty handshake and a treat whenever I meet him.

I next found myself in Bedford on the 25th of June, 1877.

Fifty miles only now separated me from Buckingham Palace, from my grandmother, the Queen, who had so cruelly wronged me, from my father, and, could it be possible, from my mother!

For ten years the "great palace" in London had entered largely into my plans of campaign to right the wrongs of my mother, when I should become a man.

I was now sixteen years and six months old. I spent a sleepless night in thinking over my plan of action.

I decided upon seeing my grandmother to ask her to give me my mother's address that I might go to her. Should my request be refused, I would go to France to secure the support of that country and return at the head of the French Army to invade England. I would capture London, place my father and mother on the throne, and send my grandmother into exile, as she had exiled my mother and myself by robbing us of our rightful station.

This course I thought would be the right one to follow and perfectly just. It was the least she could expect, and I could not reconcile myself to the thought of sending my own grandmother to the Tower, no matter how richly she might have deserved it.

This plan of campaign was, however, considerably modified the following morning when a recruiting sergeant entered my Council of War. The suggestions of the sergeant that I should enter

the army were quite in keeping with my proposed ultimate line of action.

Military training and experience in active service were essential requirements of good generalship. I would avail myself of the opportunity of obtaining such training and experience. The British army, I concluded, afforded me the best possible opportunity for the carrying out of my purpose in regard to the necessary training for the proposed conquest.

CHAPTER XI

I ENLIST IN THE BEDFORDSHIRE REGIMENT STATIONED IN IRELAND—AMUSING INCIDENTS WITH IRISH PEOPLE—I REFUSE PROMOTION TO BECOME BETTER ACQUAINTED WITH THE SOLDIER'S LIFE

I ENTERED into my military career with the determination to make the most of my practical training.

The changing from one station to another in different parts of the Empire would afford me many good opportunities to familiarize myself with the customs and manners of the peoples of the Empire and the conditions under which they live.

I realized that, as my foster-mother had impressed upon me, the best means to acquire a full understanding of the lot of the people was *by being one of the people.*

To understand the life of the private soldier one must *be* a soldier. *I* would *be* a soldier.

It is the duty of the Secretary of the State for war, through various departments, and the commander-in-chief, generals commanding divisions, officers commanding regiments, and captains of companies to bring the army to the highest state of efficiency. To study scientifically the difficult

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

problem of equipment of troops on peace and war footing. It is the duty of company and battalion commanders to study the individual characteristics and temperament of each and every man under their command.

In order to successfully carry out this duty something more is necessary than the perfunctory daily inspection of barrack rooms, and weekly "kit inspections," and the visit of the officer of the day at meal times with the time-worn: "Any complaints?"

These inspections, like the inspections on parade, are carried out for the purpose of exercising, in many cases, the superior authority of the officer to enforce a servile submission rather than to command obedience in the soldier. Scarcely an inspection was made without some unfortunate fellows being reprimanded or punished on the most trivial grounds.

Some young officers on first entering upon regular duty, entertain exaggerated ideas of their duty of condescension to get in closer touch with the men.

An amusing illustration was afforded by a second lieutenant on the occasion of his first visit as officer of the day to the barrack rooms.

The men were at breakfast. The orderly officer sung out his maiden,—"Any complaints?"—he then proceeded to inspect the tables. One man was enjoying a delicacy not served in the officers' mess or even in the sergeants' mess.

It is no wonder, therefore, that this young sprig of an officer should not have seen it before.

THE MINT
AMPHORA

The appetizing dish enjoyed exclusively by "Tommy Atkins" consisted of bread soaked in his bowl of coffee.

The officer looked astonished when he saw this mixture. Speaking in a patronizing manner, he asked the man what he called that dish.

"Slingers," replied Tommy A. "You seem to enjoy it very much; is it good?" inquired the officer. "Fine," replied T. A.

Turning to the orderly sergeant, the officer instructed him to see that henceforth the men should all have "Slingers." He thought it a more suitable diet for breakfast than beefsteak or ham and eggs.

Needless to say, "Slingers" were taken as desert and not intended to displace the ration of beef, mutton or fish.

In the month of July I was drafted with other men from the Regimental Depot, Bedford, to the headquarters of the First Battalion 16th Regiment, then stationed at Buttevant, Ireland, and was attached to Company B.

I now felt that I was secure from further molestation from my guardians, and for the first time in my life felt free, although under military discipline. I enjoyed the life of the soldier, including both duties and labors.

I soon became popular with the men and the non-commissioned officers of my company. I devoted my spare time to study and getting about the neighboring country and at once became much attached to the good-natured and happy dispositioned people. It was a matter of surprise to me

to discover that people could be so happy and contented under the trying circumstances and miserable condition in which the poorer classes lived.

Most of the men spent their pay either in the canteen or the regimental coffee shop on beer and extra diet, while others would bank their money.

My hobby was to patronize the old apple women and others of that class who would sit the livelong day in all weathers to peddle their goods.

I enjoyed very much turning over my three or four shillings a week to these good souls whose lot in life is not, by any means, rosy.

I received good returns for my money, not only in the way of "good measure," but the pleasant conversations were a means of obtaining knowledge at first hand from the people whose condition I longed to improve.

One old apple woman, Mrs. Finigan, I particularly remember, whom I patronized every day.

I was always greeted with a hearty "Arrah, God bless you, my child, and it's a fine, warm marning,"—or, if raining "pitchforks,"—"It's a fine saft marning,"—or, on the coldest day in winter, with her basket on the snow and ice,—"It's a fine hard marning." No matter what the condition of the weather, good or bad, to those happy, philosophical people the weather was always "fine."

My regiment was only a few months at Buttevant after I joined; but I made the most of my time in seeing as much of the country and the people as possible in that locality and in the neighboring towns. I made many happy acquaintances

and enjoyed visiting the homesteads of tenant farmers and other classes. Indeed, the happiest years of my life were spent in Ireland. The cheerful disposition of the people and their quaint lives, always full of mirth, produced an effect upon me in striking contrast to the heartaches of my childhood.

I was once spending a very pleasant Sunday afternoon with a family some miles from town, shortly after my arrival in Ireland. We were taking tea in this humble cottage; the happy family seated around the table. My chair was located so that my back was to the front door, which was open. Suddenly there was some considerable commotion at the back of the house, the cause of which I did not understand. I had heard of the raids made on the helpless tenants and that cruel evictions were of common occurrence.

Before I had time to inquire what the trouble was, my chair and myself were raised bodily from the ground and pitched outside. It was my first experience of unjust eviction in Ireland, without notice.

I remember the good house-wife remarking as I was thus being unceremoniously evicted, "Arrah, be aisy wid ye, it's only the pig." The pigs had stampeded from the back yard through the house, one passing under my chair by way of "a short cut."

One other incident in Buttevant which I shall never forget was a little affair of the heart.

Mary O'Connor, daughter of an inn-keeper, had charge of the Buttevant Inn, while her father con-

ducted a more pretentious hostelry in Cork. Mary was a very sweet and pretty girl, with many ardent suitors.

I was an occasional visitor of the Buttevant house. On calling there one evening, I found great rejoicing. Mary was engaged, and the happy lover was "treating the house." He was going to Cork to receive the congratulations of Mary's father, but "could not," he said, "tear himself away from Mary until the following week."

The Irish side of my nature was developing rapidly in its native soil. I seized the opportunity to play a practical joke on the happy pair.

I accordingly obtained leave of absence for seven days, proceeded to Cork, and introduced myself to Mary's father as his prospective son-in-law.

Mr. O'Connor was jubilant at the surprise trip and most profuse with his congratulations and praise of my sense of duty in so promptly paying my respects to him. He collected all the patrons from the different rooms in the house, sent messengers to call relatives and friends "post haste" to drink the health of his son-in-law to be. Irish whisky was "flowing like rivers of rum," served in gallon measures, and passed round to the happy guests in half-pint mugs.

Every Irishman present was impatient for his turn to toast me, and the rapidity with which those mugs were emptied and replenished, as toast followed upon toast, was one of the most astonishing and amusing scenes I ever witnessed. My joke had succeeded beyond my most sanguine an-

ticipations. I was so convulsed with the ridiculous situation that I was voted to be the jolliest fellow alive. It was long after closing time when the reception broke up and the guests "rolled" out of the back door and led each other home.

This "wake" ("wake" was the more applicable, for the reason that I foresaw somebody's funeral should Mary's lover appear) continued up to the date set for the other fellow to arrive. On the morning of his expected arrival my prospective "father-in-law" received a letter from Mary announcing that her intended husband would be in Cork that day to pay his respects to him.

Mr. O'Connor nearly had a fit.

"What in the name of hivens does she mane? Has she gone crazy entoirely? Here yer afther being here nearly a week and bedad she says yer only coming to-day. What does it all mane?"

In order to avoid unpleasant developments I had to explain that "Mary was quite right; that when I left her I told her that I was going to Dublin and would come directly from there to see you," and was due to arrive that day.

I said that I could not stay away any longer from Mary and suggested that he should accompany me to Buttevant and make her a surprise visit, to which he readily agreed.

By this ruse I got O'Connor out of the way before my rival arrived, and whom we passed on the way.

On reaching Buttevant I suggested that O'Connor should remain at a neighboring inn for half an hour or so, to give me a chance to greet Mary,

and also to make the surprise of his visit more complete.

I saw Mary, invited her to have a glass of wine and confessed to her the joke that I had played, also telling her that I had given the other fellow the slip by bringing her father away.

The whole thing appealed to her humor immensely, and I thought she would never stop laughing. At length she said, "But the other John was too slow to see through a fence," and, that "he wasn't worth bothering her head about."

Mr. O'Connor now came in and I was again treated as the "real thing" by both Mary and her father. Mary could not refrain, however, from telling the old gentleman the joke I had played, at which he and everybody present roared with laughter.

He very graciously told me that a young fellow as bright as I was, was well worthy of Mary. Another round of festivities followed, notwithstanding that I had not proposed or even made love to Mary.

It was some time before Mary could bring herself to forgive the other fellow for having allowed himself to be outwitted in love.

I had been at recruits' drill a few weeks, when one morning while on parade Lt. Col. Bostock, the officer commanding the regiment, rode onto the parade grounds, a very unusual occurrence at recruits' drill.

Riding up to the officer in charge on the opposite side of the square from that on which my squad was drilling, he made some inquiry. The

officer in question called to a drill sergeant and spoke to him.

The sergeant, raising his pace stick, pointed across the square, singling out the squad to which I belonged. The colonel, without paying attention to any other squad on the parade ground, rode directly to my squad.

Stopping just out of hearing, he called my drill sergeant, who went up and saluted.

The colonel spoke to him, whereupon the sergeant turned and, calling me by name, called me up to the commanding officer. On my saluting the colonel, he said, "Your name is John Norman, is it not?"

I replied, saying, "My name is George Norman, sir." (I had enlisted under the name of George Norman and dropped the John for the obvious reason that I did not wish to be discovered by my guardians, being still a minor, although wearing the Queen's uniform.)

The colonel looked surprised. "George!" he exclaimed; "I thought it was John?" "George, sir," I replied.

As though not satisfied, he unfastened his tunic and drew a letter partly out of his pocket. Then, on second thought, he thrust it back, saying as he did so, "Oh, well, George, then."

He then said, "Now, George, you are a bright young fellow, and must be pushed rapidly forward. You must be promoted at once, and in the course of two or three years you ought to receive a commission. Immediately you are dismissed from this parade, go to your Pay Sergeant and tell

him that it is by my orders that an application is to be sent in to-day for you to be made a Lance-Corporal. The Captain of your Company will sign the application, and you will be in orders to-day."

Here was a revelation!

Why had the Colonel come onto the parade ground at the nine o'clock recruits' drill for the express purpose of singling me out from some two hundred recruits, most of whom were further advanced in drill, having been longer in the regiment?

Why the mistake in the given name, John, when George was the name on the roll?

Why his surprise at the "George?"

What had the letter in his pocket to do with settling the name?

He had just received the morning mail, and it was evident that he had received some communication from somebody, which called for prompt attention.

While I regretted to discover that I had not eluded the "powers that be," it was a matter of relief to know that I was not likely to be interfered with, as was shown by the Colonel's declared intention to push me forward rapidly, with a view to my obtaining a commission in the brief period of three years.

I saw through the whole thing. The intention of those responsible for that communication and visit of the commanding officer, in wishing to see me rapidly promoted was very good. But I could not forget that I had been robbed of my legitimate birthright, and that I had spurned the miserable

pittance allowed for my support as a child, and I wanted no promotion at their hands or through their influence. I therefore replied to the Colonel, thanking him for the honor done me, and for his good wishes, but begged to be allowed to decline his offer, on the ground that "the first duty of a soldier is to learn to obey," and that "he who would command must first learn to obey," and that in my opinion a recruit with but a few weeks service, who had not yet learned his drill, was not fitted to command soldiers with twenty years' experience and service.

The Colonel tried to talk me out of it, but I was firm, and refused absolutely to take promotion for upwards of three years. I was then promoted *without my knowledge or consent,* which was in India. There was nothing for me to do but to obey the published orders of the commanding officer.

CHAPTER XII

AMUSING STORIES OF A SOLDIER'S LIFE IN IRELAND—WITH COL. HILLIER ON SPIKE ISLAND—OUTBREAK OF CONVICTS—I PLAY THE ROLE OF COMMANDER OF CORK HARBOR

An amusing incident which occurred while my regiment was stationed at Buttevant, was when I joined Sergeant P—— in a practical joke, which we played upon his beautiful and charming wife, and by which the Sergeant hoped to cure her of a most trying fault.,

Sergeant William P—— had been in charge of the mess and was a most congenial comrade.

Mrs. P—— was a woman of many accomplishments and most fascinating, but she was of an extremely jealous nature.

I was frequently a visitor at the P—— residence, which was outside of the barracks, and much enjoyed Mrs. P——'s general topic of conversation, "Billy and his flirting propensities."

A lady in high life,* who was blamed for demoralizing the German Army, is reported to have said, "One does not look for virtue in a soldier."

---

*"Private Lives of Kaiser William II and his Consort" by Henry W. Fischer.

Had the Duchess —— met "Billy" P—— she would probably not have set up such a defense, for "Billy" was an exemplary little fellow.

Mrs. P—— spent a great deal of time and lost a lot of sleep watching her beloved spouse.

Almost any day or night at the hour Billy was expected to be off duty, Mrs. P—— might be found waiting to escort him home.

One fine afternoon word reached Mrs. P——'s ears that a beautiful young lady was spending the afternoon with Sergeant P—— in the mess.

Mrs. P—— lost no time in making her way to the mess.

She was not unexpected. Billy espied her from the window as she was crossing the barrack square. The young lady also looked from the window and was observed by Mrs. P——, who quickened her pace. The young lady opened the front door; escape was impossible from that direction, Mrs. P—— being too near, and at that instant started on the "double-quick." Slamming the front door the girl, accompanied by Billy, beat a hasty retreat from the back door. It was a case of "follow the leader" around the barracks, through the sergeant's mess, in and out of different company rooms, until, finally, the culprits reached the barracks gate with Mrs. P—— less than thirty yards behind.

The public thoroughfare being reached, Billy and his fair companion felt somewhat relieved. They dashed across to an adjacent hotel, Mrs. P—— in close pursuit. Without waiting to answer questions the pair hurried past the astonished

hotel clerks and through the back door, as Mrs. P—— entered the front; and so the merry chase continued for well-nigh an hour, through streets and alleys, public houses and hotels, until poor Mrs. P—— was almost exhausted and began to lose ground. The scene created much amusement through the town.

The more the people laughed the more exasperated Mrs. P—— became, and finally gave up in despair and made her way home.

I was enjoying a quiet chat with Sergeant P—— in the front parlor of the sergeant's residence when Mrs. P—— came in. With a scream of rage she flew at Billy, seizing his hair in one hand and his long moustache in the other she pulled and shook him nearly out of his boots.

For many years Sergeant P—— had been proud to boast of possessing the longest, heaviest and most "fetching" moustache in the British Army.

The above was the only occasion that I ever heard him curse this flowing ornament as a misfortune.

Mrs. P—— commenced a tirade of abuse at the unfortunate Billy; and accused him of his perfidy.

Now, Billy and I were chums, and I naturally tried to pacify Mrs. P——, assuring her that I had been in her husband's company the entire afternoon, and had not left him for a single moment! I was, therefore, confident that he had not been in the company of any young lady.

Mrs. P—— was indignant and asked me if I thought she was "crazy or dreaming," to which I rather ungallantly replied, "Possibly a little of

both. Jealousy, carried to extremes, can hardly be said to be a normal condition, and, unless you can show me the girl I shall have to conclude that you were either dreaming or very much mistaken."

Mrs. P—— said she would very much like to have the opportunity to show me the girl. If she had that opportunity the girl would fare very much worse than Billy had done.

On being asked if she would know the girl if she saw her, she replied that she would know her the moment she set eyes on her; and at once proceeded to describe her dress, hat, and general appearance, remarking that the hat worn by the girl was very similar to one of her own.

I thought it time to withdraw to give husband and wife an opportunity to talk the matter over, as I did not wish to interfere in their domestic affairs. I left, promising to return within half an hour.

I adjourned to an adjoining room and proceeded to change my military uniform for the petticoats, gown, hat, and wig, which I had discarded less than two minutes prior to Mrs. P——'s return home.

On giving the finishing touches to my toilet I stepped from the house, only to ring the front-door bell. A moment later, and, lo, the rivals stood glaring at each other through the open door.

Had it not been for a roar of laughter from Sergeant P—— at the psychological moment the poor "girl" would have fared very badly at the hands of a jealous wife.

The game was up; but it was worth the playing. Mrs. P—— laughed until she became hysterical.

She declared that she would never again watch Billy—she was cured of jealousy.

My regiment was now ordered to Athlone, where my life as a British soldier continued to be a happy one, replete with amusing incidents and pleasant memories.

While stationed there I had occasion, one evening, to go to the kitchen in the officers' mess, at dinner time, to ascertain the cause of delay in sending up the various courses. It was my duty to supervise this function.

I found the cook, Cook by name and cook by nature, as well as by occupation, weighing somewhere in the neighborhood of three hundred and forty pounds, and with a face like a Christmas pudding, considerably the worse for liquor, aggravated perhaps by the heat of the range.

This, however, being his natural condition, it would have been a matter of surprise to have found him in any other state. Indeed, the very possibility of finding Mr. Cook sober reminds me of a chief officer of a certain vessel, who, having been frequently reprimanded by his Captain, was finally entered on the log for drunkenness. In vain he pleaded the following day to have the charge erased from the log. The Captain was firm, and asked, "Is it true that you were drunk?" "Yes, it is true," replied the mate, "but you might take it off." "Well," replied the Captain, "if it is true, it stands on the log." Repeated entreaties failed to move the Captain. Some mornings later the Captain, on looking at the log, after relieving the mate, was astonished to find the fol-

lowing entry: "Captain Smith was sober to-day." The indignant Captain called for the mate and demanded that the obnoxious entry be forthwith removed from the log. "Is it true?" thundered the mate. "Of course it is true, you lubber." "Very well, then," rejoined the mate, "if it is true, it stands on the log."

In all my experience in the officers' mess with Mr. Cook, both of Cork and Athlone, I found no opportunity to make any such entry as that made against the Captain.

I remonstrated with the cook for the dilatory manner in which dinner was being served.

He was in the act of removing the "Jack" from the front of the range and then proceeded to empty the fat from the large tin dripping pan into a pan in the larder. As he was skimming the fat with a spoon, he continued his tirade of abuse, which was too much for my young blood to stand. Placing my hand on the top of his head, I ducked his head into the dripping fat. The hot fat caused him to splutter and bawl. In taking his head from the pan, the fat soon became cool on his face, forming a mask back to his ears and under his chin.

The commotion caused by this little incident brought the caterer, Mr. S—— to the scene. Mr. S——, like the cook, had his load to carry, and was inclined to be boisterous. He insisted upon the cook going directly to the mess room to report the matter to Captain Wickham, the president of the mess committee, and show him the evidence of the assault upon him, namely, the mask

of fat. Foreseeing the amusement it would cause in the mess room, I encouraged him to do so, and myself offered to inform the Captain that the cook desired to see him.

I accordingly preceded the cook to the mess room, explaining to Captain Wickham that the cook wished to see him, and in response to his inquiry as to what the cook wanted to see him about, I said, "The usual thing—drinking, and had his own grievances. He overbalanced himself while emptying the fat into the dripping pan and buried his face in the fat (this loud enough to be heard by all the officers present. He now thinks that I pushed his head into the dripping pan." I requested Captain Wickham to see him.

The officers left the mess room *en masse* to inspect the cook, who had by this time struggled up to the ante-room. His appearance caused a roar of laughter from the younger officers. Captain Wickham, after having listened to his complaint, ordered the cook downstairs and to bed as the best place to sleep off both the drink and the fat.

Soon after my arrival in Cork I was some months in the hospital, suffering with my eyes.

On leaving the hospital Lt.-Col. Hillier, who had been appointed officer commanding Cork harbor, sent for me, and said that he would be glad if I would go with him to Spike Island to take charge of him and his bachelor apartments. He thought the sea air would benefit me. This was in 1878.

Spike Island is the headquarters of the officer commanding Cork harbor, and a great convict settlement. At that time there were a number of the

noted Fenian leaders in that convict settlement, some of whom were afterwards pardoned and are now living in New York and other places in America.

Some little time after Colonel Hillier took over command an outbreak occurred one night. The alarm was sounded, the troops turned out and the officer of the day and staff officer called for the officer commanding. He was absent from the Island, having gone to Cork. He had not, however, notified other officers of his absence. I, therefore, at the age of seventeen, assumed the responsibility of the officer commanding Cork Harbor.

Leaving the officers at the door I went to the Colonel's rooms under the pretense of calling him, and getting orders. I then went back to the staff officer and gave the supposed commands of the officer commanding for the necessary action to be taken by the troops to suppress the outbreak. I added that the Colonel was getting up and would be on the ground as soon as possible. In the meantime I myself would come up with any other commands that he might have. I pointed out that, as the Colonel weighed some twenty odd stone, and was afflicted with the gout, both in mind and body, it would take him some little time to get to the scene of action.

I followed the officers up to the scene of trouble and gave another command to a staff officer, as though the same came from the officer commanding the Harbor.

The riot was quelled before the Colonel returned to the Island. Having sent a message to him at

the beginning of the outbreak, I met him at the landing, and, in response to his inquiry if the next senior officer had assumed command, I said, "No. The officer commanding Cork Harbor was in command and gave the necessary orders." He looked dumbfounded. "The officer commanding Cork Harbor, sir?" "The Devil! The officer commanding Cork Harbor was in Cork, and not in Spike Island. How the h— then, could he give commands?" I informed him that as I understood he was absent without leave, I did not care to see him called upon to explain, and that I had accordingly taken command myself, but that none of the officers were aware of his absence from the Island; whereupon he roared with laughter, and jokingly threatened to court martial me for impersonating the officer commanding.

He said afterwards, he wondered "what some of those d—— Fenians would think if they knew that their desperate attempt to escape had been successfully suppressed by the troops in command of a boy."

My friend, Colonel Hillier, was later gazetted to the command of the Second Battalion of the Bedfordshire Regiment in India. He asked me if I would go to India with him. I said that I would be glad to go if he went. I asked him if he seriously contemplated going; to which he replied that he did, if he had to "walk all the way." Later, however, on my asking him when he expected to leave for India, he asked me if I thought he had "no better sense than to go to India and be roasted alive." He did not go, but retired.

I accordingly rejoined my regiment in Cork. During my two years and three months' service in Ireland, I was on Staff employ for two years.

In 1878 I volunteered for active service when war was expected with Russia, which country was mobilizing a large army on the frontier of Afghanistan, threatening to invade India; and whose agents were active in stirring up trouble in Afghanistan, which finally led to the Afghan War, and threatening Bulgaria and Constantinople at the same time.

The reserves were called out, and there was great excitement in the barracks. Men were eager to get a slap at Russia. A large number of men were sent out from my regiment to the Afghan War, but for some reason the doctor passed me as "unfit" for active service. From words passed by the officers of my own company, and from the conduct of the army surgeon, I was of the opinion that somebody was responsible for preventing my going to the front, and I so expressed myself in rather indignant terms to the army surgeon.

Some of the reserves were drafted to my regiment, among them an Irish sergeant, who created much amusement. One day when orderly sergeant he went to take the regimental orders in the usual way. It was his duty to read the orders to the company the same evening. He did not do so, for reasons found out the next day at the commanding officer's parade.

After the inspection of the company, by the Captain, he called for the order book, and, opening it, said, "Pay attention to orders." Looking at the

book, he read, "Regimental Orders." He stopped, called for the Lieutenant and asked him to read the orders. The Lieutenant, upon looking at the book, begged to be excused. The Pay-Sergeant was then called and instructed to read the orders. The Pay-Sergeant looked at the book and gasped! The Captain asked the latter, "Who wrote those orders?" to which the Pay-Sergeant replied, "The orderly sergeant." "Then make the orderly sergeant read them," said the Captain.

Sergeant Flynn came forward, and the Captain asked if he had written the orders, to which Sergeant Flynn replied, "Yis, sorr." "Well, read them, then," said the Captain in disgust. Sergeant Flynn staggered the Captain by the following reply:

"And indade, sorr, I had the divil's own job to write them. I tried to read thim to the company last night, but the divil of a word could I make out of thim. I'd be afther asking you to excuse me this toime. I think the parade would be dismissed before I could get through with the first line." He was excused.

CHAPTER XIII

SPIKE ISLAND UNIVERSITY OF EXPERIENCE—THE SORROWS OF IRELAND PORTRAYED IN CHAINS—INHUMAN EVICTIONS, STARVATION, PESTILENCE AND DEATH—MY SOUL STIRRED WITH PITY, I TAKE UP THE BURDEN OF MY MOTHER'S ANCESTRAL HOME

My experience on Spike Island gave me food for deep reflection.

To stand and watch the heavily chained gangs of desperate convicts as they passed to and from Spike Island and neighboring Islands to labor and back to their dormitories to sleep; and to visit the scene of their servitude, caused me to ponder on the lot of the convict.

For what causes had this large body of men been sentenced to long terms, many for life, to this convict settlement?

What was the cause of so much violent crime in Ireland?

In a country well governed, the industries and trades protected, would mean prosperity; and men would surely rather labor in peace and enjoy domestic happiness and prosperity than turn to violent crime to be banished to penal servitude, chained like animals on a desolate island.

Investigation soon satisfied me that the development of the natural resources of Ireland had been retarded, her manufacturing, agricultural, and other industries ruined; the tenants were unable to meet their rents, and were in consequence being evicted in large numbers. Famine and pestilence stalked throughout the land.

I have already stated that the daily witnessing of thousands of heavily fettered convicts moving along in silent procession, the only sound being the clank of the chains which could be heard for some considerable distance, caused me to study the subject very seriously.

The distress then prevailing in Ireland, and which in the following year, 1879, was probably greater than at any time since the famine of 1847, led me to seek the cause.

In order to acquire any adequate knowledge of the prevailing conditions of poverty, it was necessary that I should familiarize myself with the history of Ireland, and more particularly with the agricultural and manufacturing industries of the past.

I must confess that when I read the history of the suffering of the Irish people and the grossly unjust manner in which that unfortunate country had been ruled and its people persecuted *I could not help but weep for Ireland.*

The terrible famine and plague which fell upon Ireland in 1846 should have appealed to the British Parliament and to the British people; for, notwithstanding, all the talk about the *Anglo-Saxon*

race, the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland are in reality of Celtic descent, Celtic blood largely predominating in England as in Ireland, Scotland, and Wales.

It is a blot upon the British Parliament and the British race that the same tyrannical feudal system of landlordism should have been permitted to continue after the appalling experience which devastated Ireland during the famine of 1846 and 1847, and the plague that followed. Where two in a family died from starvation, whole families were swept away by the plague.

It is not my purpose to give in these Memoirs a history of the terrible sufferings of that country from that time up to 1877-'79, the time of my sojourn there. In order to make clear to the public what led me to determine to devote my attention to the emancipation of Ireland from economic starvation, I will give a few illustrations of the terrible conditions in that country from 1846 to 1879.

In 1846 the Inspectors-General of Prisons reported that the committals in that year over the year 1845 sometimes amounted to one hundred per cent.; and further reported that "in a very great number of instances small crimes have been committed for the purpose of obtaining that support in prison which could not be procured elsewhere."*

The prisons became to the starving nation the only harbor of refuge.

As the suffering became more acute, sheep steal-

*"Census Commissioners" p. 304.

ing and violent crime increased to an amazing extent. When industrious, honest, self-respecting men are driven to such a condition of starvation that they deem themselves most fortunate should they succeed in being sentenced to transportation for a long term of years, the Government of such a nation stands arraigned and condemned before the tribunal of Almighty God, the King of Kings.

In the year 1847 the Inspectors-General of Prisons reported "the terrible catastrophe which has disorganized the whole framework of society in Ireland, fell with its full force on establishments under our charge. Disease and death increased to a degree that could never be contemplated by those acquainted with the usual orderly and healthy state of our jails. The crowding together of 12,883 prisoners in jails calculated to contain 5,655 increased the deaths in Irish prisons in a single year from 131 to 1,315." *

Dr. Browne of the Castlebar jail wrote in March, "Our county jail was crowded to more than double its capacity, those committed being in a state of nudity, filth, and starvation. By the end of April we were in a state of actual pestilence (typhus fever). Every hospital servant was attacked, and from our wretched over-crowded state the mortality was fearful—fully forty per cent. . . . Not a few of those committed were inmates of the fever wards a few hours after committal." †

---

* Census Commissioners pp. 300-301.

†Census Commissioners pp. 304-305.

"In the year 1848 the increase of committals over those of 1847 was 34,105." *

The Census Commissioner's report on number of deaths from fever (Tables of Death, page 243), comments:

1. "No pen has recorded the number of the forlorn and starving who perished by the wayside or in the ditches, or the mournful groups, sometimes of whole families, who lay down and died one after the other upon the floor of their miserable cabin, and so remained uncoffined and unburied till chance unveiled the appalling scene."

Justin McCarthy, at that time a reporter on the *Cork Examiner,* related incidents of the horrors he witnessed at that time.

The sinister hinged coffin, invented to keep up a semblance of Christian decency in burying the dead, served for an indeterminable number of corpses to be passed through.

In Skibbereen I saw the sites of two large pits, into which hundreds of victims were buried without coffins, or were passed through the hinged coffin into the pits.

The years 1848 and 1849 were as bad as that of

*The Inspectors-General of Prisons report included the following:—"The calamitous visitation of the last few years, operating with no exclusive pressure—affecting the most opulent and the humblest poor alike—suspending employment and staying the hand of charity has sorely tried the integrity of our people. *Larcenies have multiplied,* because ordinarily men will steal food rather than die." Report of Inspectors-General of Prisons:—"Census Commissioner's Tables of Deaths," p. 311.

1847, the official death roll being higher in 1849 than in 1847.

The total number of deaths reported from cholera and other epidemics in 1849 was 240,797, and from zymotic diseases 123,386.

The foregoing is but a meagre description of the horrors of the famine and pestilence which devastated Ireland in 1847, 1848, and 1849.

The famine and plague can only be attributed to the feudal landlords, or, to go to the real source, to the British Parliament, through the violation of the terms of the Act of Union, thus making such barbarous treatment of tenants possible.

Humanity demanded that tenants should have been protected during the period of famine. Rents should have been reduced, or cancelled, as is customary with English landlords. But, what was done in Ireland? I can not go into details to show how hundreds of thousands of people were driven from their homes to starve or die from pestilence throughout the country, even where no rent was due.

The Blue Book, No. 1089, on "Reports and Returns Relating to Evictions in the Kilrush Union, 1849, p. 3, by Captain Kennedy, serves to show the enormity of the crime against this helpless famine stricken people.

The report covers the period from Nov. 25, 1847, to June 19, 1849. I only give a few extracts from Captain Kennedy's report. They tell their own story:

"November 25, 1847.—An immense number of

small landholders are under ejectment, or notice to quit, even where the rents have been paid up.

"February 11, 1848.— . . . Upwards of 120 houses have been "tumbled" on one property within a few weeks, containing families to a greater number, many of whom are burrowing behind the ditches, without the means of procuring shelter.

"March 16, 1848.—We admitted a considerable number of paupers, among whom were some of the most appalling cases of destitution and suffering it has ever been my lot to witness. The state of most of these wretched creatures is traceable to the numerous evictions which have lately taken place in the union. When driven from their cabins they betake themselves to the ditches or the shelter of some bank, and there exist like animals, till starvation or the inclemency of the weather drives them to the workhouse. There were three cart-loads of these creatures, who could not walk, brought for admission yesterday, some in fever, some suffering from dysentery, and all from want of food.

"April 6, 1848.—While hundreds are being turned out houseless and helpless daily on small property in Killard division, no less than twenty-three houses, containing probably one hundred souls, being tumbled in one day, March 27; I believe the extent of land occupied with these twenty-three houses did not exceed fifty acres. The suffering and misery attendant upon these wholesale evictions is indescribable. The number of houseless paupers in this union is beyond my calculation;

those evicted crowd neighboring cabins and villages, and disease is necessarily generated. On its first appearance the wretched sufferer, and probably the whole family to which he or she belongs, is ruthlessly turned out on the roadside. The popular dread of dysentery seems to excuse any degree of inhumanity. The workhouse and temporary hospital are crowded to the utmost extent they can possibly contain; the crowding of the fever hospital causes me serious anxiety. The relieving officer has directions to send no more in: yet, notwithstanding this caution, panic-stricken and unnatural parents frequently send in a donkey-load of children in fever a distance of fourteen or fifteen miles for admission. How to dispose of them I know not.

"April 8, 1848.—I calculate that 6,000 houses have been levelled since November, and expect 500 more before July.

"July 5, 1848.—Twenty thousand, or one-fourth of the population, are now in receipt of daily food, either in or out of the workhouse. Disease has unfortunately kept pace with destitution, and the high mortality at one period since last November, in and out of the workhouse, was most distressing. I have frequently been astonished by the sudden and unexpected pressure from certain localities; this naturally induced an inquiry into the causes, and eventually into a general review of the whole union. *The result of this inquiry has convinced me that destitution has been increased, and its character fearfully aggravated by the system of wholesale evictions which has been adopted; that*

a fearful amount of disease and mortality has also resulted from the same causes, I can not doubt, I have painful experience of it daily. [The italics are mine.] To make this understood, I may state, in general terms, that about 900 houses, containing probably 4,000 occupants, have been levelled in this union since last November. The wretchedness, ignorance and helplessness of the poor on the western coast of this union prevent them seeking a shelter elsewhere; and, to use their own phrase, "they don't know where to face"; they linger about the localities for weeks or months, burrowing behind the ditches, under a few broken rafters of their former dwelling, refusing to enter the workhouse till the parents are broken down and the children half starved, when they come into the workhouse to swell the mortality one by one. Those who obtain a temporary shelter in adjoining cabins are not more fortunate. Fever and dysentery shortly make their appearance, when those affected are put out by the roadside as carelessly and ruthlessly as if they were animals; when frequently after days and nights of exposure, they are sent in by the relieving officers when in a helpless state. These inhuman acts are induced by the popular terror of fever. I have frequently reported cases of this sort. The misery attendant upon these wholesale and simultaneous evictions is frequently aggravated by hunting these ignorant, helpless creatures off the property, from which, perhaps, they have never wandered five miles. It is not an unusual occurrence to see forty or fifty houses

levelled in one day, and orders given that no remaining tenant or occupier should give them even a night's shelter. I have known some ruthless acts committed by drivers and sub-agents, but no doubt, according to law (the law of Christian England!) however repulsive to humanity; wretched hovels pulled down, where the inmates were in a helpless state of fever and nakedness, and left by the roadside for days. As many as 300 souls, creatures of the most helpless class have been left houseless in one day, and the suffering and misery therefrom attributed to insufficient relief or maladministration of the law: it would not be a matter of surprise that it failed altogether in such localities as those I allude to.

"When relieved, charges of profuse expenditure are readily preferred. The evicted crowd into the back lanes and wretched hovels of the towns and villages, scattering disease and dismay in all directions. The character of some of these hovels defies description. I not long since found a widow, whose three children were in fever, occupying the piggery of their former cabin, which lay beside them in ruins; however incredible it may appear, this place they had lived in for weeks, measured five feet by four, and of corresponding height. I offered her a free conveyance to the workhouse, which she steadily refused; her piggery was knocked down as soon as her children were able to crawl out on recovery; and she has now gone forth a wanderer. I could not induce any neighbor to take her in, even for payment; she had medical aid, and all necessary relief from the union."

When it is borne in mind that the above report refers to one union only, the extent of suffering throughout the country must have been appalling and indescribable.

What is the manner of the evictions?

Let us quote an eye-witness, the Most Reverend Dr. Nulty, Lord Bishop of Meath. The event occurred in September, 1847, near Mount Nugent, county Cavan. Dr. Nulty says:

"In the very first year of our ministry, as a Missionary Priest in this diocese, we were an eye-witness of a cruel and inhuman eviction, which even still makes our heart bleed as often as we allow ourselves to think of it.

"Seven hundred human beings were driven from their homes in one day and set adrift on the world, to gratify the caprice of one who, before God and man, probably deserved less consideration than the last and least of them. And we remember well that there was not a single shilling of rent due on the estate at the time, except by one man; and the character and acts of that man made it perfectly clear that the agent and himself quite understood each other.

"The Crow-bar Brigade, employed on the occasion to extinguish the hearths and demolish the homes of honest, industrious men, worked away with a will at their awful calling until evening. At length an incident occurred that varied the monotony of the grim, ghastly ruin which they were spreading all around. They stopped suddenly, and recoiled panic-stricken with terror from two dwellings which they were directed to destroy with the

rest. They had just learned that a frightful typhus fever held those houses in its grasp, and had already brought pestilence and death to their inmates. They, therefore, supplicated the agent to spare these houses a little longer; but the agent was inexorable, and insisted that the houses should come down. The ingenuity with which he extricated himself from the difficulties of the situation was characteristic alike of the heartlessness of the man and of the cruel necessities of the work in which he was engaged. He ordered a large winnowing-sheet to be secured over the beds in which the fever victims lay—fortunately they happened to be perfectly delirious at the time—and then directed the houses to be unroofed cautiously and slowly, 'because,' he said, 'he very much disliked the bother and discomfort of a coroner's inquest.' I administered the last sacrament of the church to four of these fever victims next day; and, save the above-mentioned winnowing-sheet, there was not then a roof nearer to me than the canopy of heaven.

"The horrid scenes I then witnessed I shall remember all my life long. The wailing of women; the screams, the terror, the consternation of children; the speechless agony of honest, industrious men, wrung tears of grief from all who saw them. I saw the officers of a large police force, who were obliged to attend on the occasion, cry like children at beholding the cruel sufferings of the very people whom they would be obliged to butcher had they offered the least resistance. The heavy rains that usually attend the autumnal equinoxes de-

scended in cold, copious torrents throughout the night, and at once revealed to those sufferers the awful realities of their condition. I visited them next morning, and rode from place administering to them all the comfort and consolation I could. The appearance of men, women, and children, as they emerged from the ruins of their former homes—saturated with rain, blackened and besmeared with soot, shivering in every member from cold and misery—presented positively the most appalling spectacle I ever looked at. The landed proprietors in a circle all around—and for many miles in every direction—warned their tenantry, with threats of their direst vengeance, against the humanity of extending to any of them the hospitality of a night's shelter. Many of these poor people were unable to emigrate with their families; while, at home, the hand of every man was raised against them. They were driven from the land on which Providence had placed them; and, in the state of society surrounding them, every other walk of life was rigidly closed to them. What was the result? After battling in vain with privation and pestilence, they at last graduated from the workhouse to the tomb; and in little more than three years, nearly a fourth of them lay quietly in their graves."

The foregoing gruesome history of 1847-'48-'49 will serve to give the reader some idea of the sufferings in Ireland during the time that I was there, 1877-'79.

The famine and evictions, while not so bad as

the famine and pestilence of 1847-'48-'49, was sufficiently heartrending to make a lifelong impression upon me. The wholesale evictions and the heartless manner in which the people were thrown out of their homes proved that the Irish landlords of 1879 were as barbarous and inhuman as they were in 1846-'47-'48 and '49.

The more closely I have followed the Irish question during the years which have intervened since I sailed from Cork to India, on September 29, 1879, the more I have blushed for shame for the manner in which the British Parliament has opposed every measure introduced for the amelioration of the condition of the people of Ireland.

The late Charles Stuart Parnell and other champions of the Irish cause were subjected to all manner of unjust treatment as representatives in the House of Commons by their bigoted opponents, who, rather than allow a measure to pass the House, have suspended Irish members, stooped to diabolical intrigue such as tiring out the few faithful Patriots by extended sessions of thirty-six hours or more, which was nothing to the plotters, who arranged for relays or reliefs of their own party.

They did not hesitate to throw these gentlemen into prison or even to transport them to Spike Island, Dartmoor or other convict settlements, under the barbarous and absurd Act the 34, Edward III of 1360 (obsolete in Great Britain but still in force in Ireland).

To what can we attribute the cause of this suffering, misery, injustice, persecution and misrule?

The answer to the first part of the question is illustrated in the two following paragraphs; and the answer to the latter part of the question will be found in the next chapter.

The great number of silk-hatted and frock-coated commercial travelers met with in Ireland, representing English manufacturers and wholesale houses tells its own story. The trade was practically in the hands of the English. The poor Irish salesmen in their plain attire failed to produce the psychological impression upon the shopkeeper that the English dandies made upon them.

It is an old saying that "there is something rotten in the State of Denmark."

Since the introduction of Alexandra, and with her, the Danish rule in England in 1863 there has been something rotten in Ireland. Danish influence at the English Court is responsible for the Danish invasion of the English market, to which Ireland owes much of its poverty and distress. While Ireland has suffered for many years, there is no parallel in the history of the misery of her people since that time, as is shown by the fact that there were two hundred thousand evictions during the reign of my grandmother, the late Queen Victoria, and by the terrible scenes enacted against the Land League and other organizations established by Irish patriots for the protection of the honor of their hearth and home.

The application of the absurd Act 34 Edward III of 1360 (see paper on Empire Reform League and Addenda) to suppress the efforts of such men as Charles Stuart Parnell, Michael Davitt and

others, by throwing them into prison without trial, reflected upon the Government rather than upon the noble "offenders."

Some idea of the sufferings of the people in Ireland during my three years' sojourn in that country may be gathered from the following figures showing the depreciation in the potato crop from 1876 to 1879:

	VALUE.*
1876	£12,464,382
1877	5,271,822
1878	7,579,512
1879	3,341,512

The average crop for ten years was 60,752,918 cwts. The crop for 1879 was 22,273,520 cwts.

The official record of evictions for the same years was as follows:†

1876	1,269
1877	1,323
1878	1,749
1879	2,667

Thus there was no mercy shown by the Irish landlords to the famine stricken tenants. Under such conditions it is little wonder that violent crime should have been prevalent, or that men of principle should stand for liberty and justice.

The painful impressions which I took with me

*Thaw's Directory.

†Healy, p. 2.

from Ireland have remained with me throughout my life.

The agrarian difficulties have since been adjusted by legislation, and the economic conditions much improved, but through my present political campaign I hope to further help that long-suffering people, on lines set out in the communications published in the addenda hereto. (See paper on "The Empire Reform League.")

CHAPTER XIV.

QUEEN VICTORIA'S PRO-GERMAN POLICY CAUSE OF OPPRESSION IN IRELAND—PROCLAMATION FOR THE EMANCIPATION OF IRELAND

If evidence be wanted to prove the pro-German policy of my grandmother, the late Queen Victoria, for the Government of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, to the detriment of the latter Kingdom, it is not far to seek.

I. In the bitter antipathy entertained by her Majesty toward the Irish race in general and to the Irish Princess Consort of her first-born son, Albert Edward Prince of Wales, and to the future Celtic King John in particular.

II. In the readiness with which Her Majesty encouraged the Emperor William's selfish demands for something for nothing whereby to strengthen the strategic position of Germany—preparatory to the German invasion of England! My grandmother, while tracing her ancestors back to the House of David through the ancient Irish Kings, was born and brought up under purely German influence. Her whole character and make-up was German. She could wed none other than a German; and she wedded as many as possible of her children to Germans. The Deceased Wife's Sis-

ter's Bill was her pet hobby. She wanted it passed in order that she might then marry the Princess Beatrice to the Reigning Grand Duke of Hesse-Darmstadt, the widower of the Princess Alice.

The Grand-Duke thwarted his irate mother-in-law in this scheme by marrying Madame Kalomine, referred to in another chapter.

Nothing daunted, the Queen found another German for Beatrice—Prince Henry of Battenberg.

My poor, dear, autocratic grandmother! I can imagine the scene which occurred when the news was first gently broken to her in the Spring of 1860, that the Consort of her successor would mean an Irish Queen in England; and that the next generation would see an Irish King, who had imbibed Irish principles, Irish virtues, and the essence of sympathy for Irish suffering, with his mother's milk.

Little wonder, indeed, that my grandmother suddenly remembered that many years previously she had promised Canada that her son should visit that Colony. The opportune moment had arrived; and Canada was forthwith advised that the Prince of Wales was about to make the long promised visit.

Little wonder that my poor dear mother was kept virtually a prisoner in Windsor Castle pending her accouchement; small wonder, indeed, that that pro-German Queen should have torn from its mother's breast the infant Prince, in whom she saw the overthrow of her cherished plans for the continued German rule over the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.

To effectively remove the danger of a Celtic King, it was necessary that the most drastic measures should be taken to remove the infant heir presumptive to the throne as far as possible from the environments of court life and to keep from him all knowledge of his identity and rightful inheritance.

While treating upon the subject of Ireland and the late Queen's policy in regard to the future of Great Britain and Ireland, it may be well to make public, to some extent at least, how the Emperor William II of Germany fell in with his grandmother's plan in this direction. It is well known that William seldom visited his grandmother without attempting to wheedle some concession from her, even though it might be nothing more than a coaling station for his fleet.

That William was familiar with Queen Victoria's pro-German policy may be seen from his cunning but ill-conceived plans for the invasion of Great Britain.

England has had an acute attack of Germanaphobia for some time. Let us diagnose this dreaded disease. The primary cause is a German parasite of abnormal mental proclivities, which induce visions of imaginary conquests of British Armadas and British strongholds.

Its attack upon the unprotected and unwary Britisher need not necessarily be fatal to the Briton. But, like a pest fly tormenting an elephant, it needs to be swished off with the tail.

The hallucination from which my deluded cousin is suffering is the idea that it is up to him to save

the world, or, in other words, to rule the world with his imperial *right* hand.

Taking advantage of the British misrule in Ireland, and the consequent suffering, starvation and the wanton sacrifice of life for centuries past, William's agents have been active in condemning the injustice of England in insisting upon maintaining the Act of Union, the provisions of which have been violated with impunity, and which violations are responsible for the terrible injustice and misery inflicted upon that unhappy country. Indeed, William has intimated his willingness, had he the power, to give Ireland her independence, and the same to Scotland and Wales—*under a German protectorate of course.* He would even go so far as to allow England to retain her independence on the same terms—with a German King on the English Throne.

This plan was matured and ready to put into operation in June, 1902. How?

1. The death of my father, the late King Edward VII was momentarily expected a few days following the date set for his coronation.

II. The nation was pre-occupied with its grief, and an invasion at that time would have been a complete surprise.

III. The military strength and home defenses had been materially weakened by the South African War.

IV. While the British Navy was cruising in peaceful waters with a small fleet sleeping in false security off Portsmouth, an imposing and formidable German fleet under the command of Prince

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Photograph by Pach Bros., New York

PRINCE JOHN DE GUELPH

King-Emperor de Jure Great Britain and Ireland, and India

Henry of Prussia was lying in Dublin Bay, Ireland. The presence of the German fleet in Dublin Bay at so critical a moment gave rise to no apprehension in the War office or Admirality. The German fleet was merely cruising to give Prince Henry a "good time."

V. Had King Edward VII died at that time it requires no stretch of the imagination to see the German fleet cross the channel; to hear Prince Henry of Prussia proclaimed King of England! That such was William's programme I learned from reliable authority shortly after my father's recovery, when I was in San Francisco.

VI. The German invasion of England under the conditions prevailing at that time would have been a "dress parade" affair, and the Germanizing of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, as separate Kingdoms of England, Ireland and Scotland, and the principality of Wales, with the Emperor as the actual autocratic ruler, would have proceeded with the lightning-like rapidity, possible only to one afflicted with the abnormal and exaggerated mental visions of a world empire in a decade, such as is fast carrying William to the unhappy fate of his great uncle.

Fortunately for the Celtic race, as also for England, and the world at large, William's little plan between "Me and Gott" was not destined to meet with divine sanction or support.

As has been seen from the sixty years' reign of the pro-German Queen Victoria, German interests are opposed to Irish independence.

A German protectorate over the proposed in-

dependent Celtic kingdoms of Ireland and Scotland and the independent principality of Wales, would not benefit the Celtic race in the end, any more than German domination in England would benefit that country. German influence operates for German interests and German interests alone, as witness the German Millers' "combination rings," paying unfortunate cultivators in India from sixty per cent. to seventy-five per cent. of the actual cost of production for rice and wheat.

As such robbery in the name of commerce is responsible for the frequent and terrible famines in India, the introduction of similar measures in Ireland would be attended by the same disastrous results, and the last condition of the Irish race would be worse than the first.

William's agents are again urging a German-American-Celtic alliance on the foregoing terms.

In the interests of my people, being myself Celtic by birth and lifelong associations, and in the interest of peace, I most devoutly pray that the Irish people in particular and the Celtic race in general will not risk losing their identity by encouraging the introduction of German blood, and German rapacity into Ireland.

The future peace and prosperity of the Celtic race *lies in their loyalty to their rightful Celtic King.*

CHAPTER XV

I SAIL FOR INDIA—INCIDENTS OF VOYAGE

In the month of August, 1879, I received the welcome news that I was, at last, to be drafted to India to join the Second Battalion of my regiment then stationed at Secunderabad, in the Hyderabad Deccan.

The number of officers, non-commissioned officers and men drafted from the First to the Second Battalion with me was about two hundred and fifty. The last few weeks we spent in Ireland were full of excitement in preparing for foreign service. Indian kits were served out, and the men about to be drafted obtained leave of absence to go to their homes to say good-bye to their parents, brothers and sisters and to their sweethearts. This latter manifestation of filial love of the soldier to father and mother awakened very painful emotions in my own heart. The soldier, son of the very poorest people of the slums of our great cities, took his leave of absence with a light heart, and, purchasing presents for those whom he loved, went home to take a last farewell before proceeding to the distant shores of India, from which many of them never returned, having fallen victims of cholera, fevers, dysentery and other

tropical diseases. But I, the first-born son of the first gentleman of England, the first peer of the realm, the (then) heir apparent to the throne of Great Britain and Ireland and the Empire of India, was obliged to bury my identity and suppress the emotions of a heart full of sorrow, and in response to the solicitations of my officers as to whether I did not wish leave of absence to bid farewell to my parents, I, the rightful heir-persumptive to the throne, could only reply, "I have no parents to whom to say good-bye."

I was a member of a regiment a thousand strong, but I had to bury my secret sorrow, and *had* I been alone upon that great Egyptian desert I could not have been at once cast into greater solitude.

I had never experienced such a feeling of utter loneliness as at that time. I felt like a child utterly cast out, and about to depart to a land far removed from my dear mother for whose loving embrace my heart yearned as never before.

The 29th day of September, the day for our departure at length arrived and we entrained at Athlone for Cork Harbor and embarked on board H. M. Troopship, the *Malabar*.

There were on board about twelve hundred troops, composed of drafts to various infantry and calvary regiments and artillery stationed in India. We sailed the same afternoon, Saturday, September 29th, 1879.

We had an uneventful voyage. The monotony was broken by the daily parades and inspections, watch and other duties, sports, minstrels and threatrical entertainments.

Our first day at sea was made somewhat impressive by reason of the church service parade, which was a strange and novel experience on the broad expanse of the ocean.

On Monday morning, while my mind was preoccupied with the painful reflections of my position, and of the fact that I was exiling myself to a land where I would be still further removed from my parents and my birthright, I could not stifle the pangs of regret at this cruel separation nor the anger that would arise against my grandmother for her cruel treatment of my mother and myself.

This natural indignation was not appeased when on answering my regimental bugle call, I found myself to be one of a party to swab the deck of the ship.

I looked at the senior sergeant in charge of our party, Tom Williams, a man with only a few days more service than myself, and whose senior or superior I would have been had I accepted my commanding officer's offer of promotion more than two years before.

Glancing along the deck of the troopship, I observed some sprigs of officers in the Queen's uniform whom I concluded would appear to better advantage were they tagged onto their mothers' apron strings.

Here were upstart sons of the gentry and aristocracy, fresh from Sandhurst with an abnormal expansion of chest and head that made the General and field officers on board look like common marines. It is surprising to contemplate the power of imagination of some of these young snobs

in finding fault with their betters—the trained soldiers.

It was this momentary review of the situation and the secret of my false position that gave me the first twinge of regret at not having pushed myself ahead in my two years' service, during which time I could have become quarter-master sergeant with a commission in near view.

As the men were ordered to proceed with the swabbing of the deck, Sergeant Williams called me from the ranks and said, "You have no business here; this is no work for you. You had better go down and report yourself to Lieut. Begbie of the South Wales Borderers. He wants someone to look after him during the voyage."

I accordingly made the acquaintance of Mr. Begbie, who occupied a cabin with Lieut. Grant on the main troop-deck.

Mr. Grant was already familiarizing himself with the pleasures of the first sea-voyage—*mal-de-mer,* and was also very grateful to have my assistance.

So it was that I had the run of the officers' saloon, could enjoy the quietude of a private cabin and all the privileges of the officers' mess in return for looking after the comfort of these two young officers.

As Grant's sea-sickness grew worse from day to day, my sympathy led me to try to relieve him. I, accordingly, sought advice from a marine who had seen much service.

That worthy recommended a pint tumbler full of sea-water, which I accordingly prescribed for

poor Grant and saw to it that he took the medicine. It was in vain that he pleaded to be excused from taking the last quarter of the dose.

I insisted that what he had taken would have no beneficial effect unless he took the full dose. Like a brave soldier he made a final charge and swallowed the remains of the tumbler of sea-water, and promptly brought up an ocean. I thought poor Grant would have died, but laughingly consoled him with assurances that he was already looking better and would be able to go on deck and get the fresh air in another five minutes.

I gave him a little champagne to settle his stomach and to get his mind in more cheerful channels than that on which it was set, for he declared he was dying and would never see his poor mother again.

I would most cheerfully have changed places with him, but as that was impossible I further assisted him in drinking the champagne.

Whether the remarkable results that followed were due to the sea-water, the champagne or my good-humored banter I do not pretend to say; I accompanied him on deck a few minutes later and the sea-sickness passed off.

Needless to say that when my style of treatment leaked out, Grant was made the butt for a good many jokes during the voyage. "Jonah," he was told, "was spewed up by the whale," but it was left for Grant to "spew up the ocean."

Having been thus transferred to the officers' saloon, I was relieved from all military duty and enjoyed practically the same advantages as the

officers during the voyage, both as regards accommodation and mess.

Lieut. Begbie was a devout Christian man and as I was similarly inclined I very much enjoyed the privacy of his stateroom for meditation and devotion.

Our first stop was at Gibraltar and our next at Malta. Our stay at each of these British military stations was only for an hour or so.

On dropping anchor at Malta the ship was immediately surrounded by native boats, manned by a most picturesque crew of natives. Their cargoes consisted of all kinds of fruits, laces, shawls, curios, and a variety of other wares. While the men and women were doing a great trade with the troops on board, the small boys caused much amusement by diving to great depths after money thrown into the water.

This was a very amusing but expensive pastime for Tommy Atkins.

A great number of officers and men had been sea-sick during the first part of the voyage and many of them had fully recovered, but our experience in that direction had been nothing to what followed on sailing from Malta.

There was a heavy swell, which soon caused a fermentation of the half ripe fruits ravenously consumed by the men in Malta.

One man who had bought a bunch of bananas, not quite half ripe, remarked that he had always heard that the banana was a very delicious fruit; he had never tasted anything more like mottled soap in his life, and if the nobility thought that

was like custard they were welcome to it; suiting the action to the word, he invited a young officer to join him with a banana. The subaltern readily fell into the trap, just to show that there was no ill feeling toward the "common" sailor, and munched heartily at his hard banana with the result that he promptly threw it to the fishes.

When lying in the Suez canal one evening a number of officers went ashore and walked across the sands in search of game. My friend Lieut. Grant, who was one of the party, managed to separate himself from the rest and lost his way.

It was quite late before he eventually got his bearings and found his way back to the ship. In order not to give an alarm and thereby get himself in trouble, Grant swam the canal with his clothes on, and came aboard long after midnight like a drowned rat.

The most impressive incident of the voyage to the young soldiers was the burial of a comrade in mid-ocean. We were prepared to be shot and have our bones bleached by a tropical sun, but to be fed to the sharks was something that we had not calculated upon.

On October 28th, we landed at Bombay, where I took farewell of Lieut. Begbie, Grant and others, as the members of the different regiments set out for different parts of that vast peninsula.

CHAPTER XVI

MY WELCOME TO INDIA IN STRIKING CONTRAST TO THAT OF MY FATHER—MY FIRST IMPRESSIONS OF THE LAND OF FAMINE—"INDIA'S CORAL STRANDS"—"THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES"—THE DYING AND THE DEAD—SHAPE MY FUTURE LIFE AND I RESOLVE TO SOLVE THE PROBLEM—INCIDENTS OF EARLY MILITARY LIFE IN INDIA

After having breakfasted in the beautiful new railway station of Bombay, one of the most magnificent structures in India, we entrained for Poona, where we encamped for about a fortnight, before proceeding to join our regiment.

Poona is a military station, and troops on arrival in India are sometimes quarantined there. We eventually proceeded on our way to Secunderabad; leaving Poona in the evening we reached Shahabad at about eight o'clock the following morning, at which station we were to breakfast.

The terrible sight that I witnessed as our train was approaching Shahabad was one that will remain with me as long as I live. That scene which extended about half a mile outside of the station up to the platform determined the course of my life during the whole time I was in India and since.

Had our train run into the valley of dry-bones, and had those bones come together in the form of living skeletons, the sight could not have been more appalling. There, before us, were thousands of living skeletons, men and women, victims of the terrible famine which had carried off more than one hundred million of their unfortunate countrymen during the British occupation of the Empire.

These miserable sufferers as they cried for food, were beyond the reach of human aid; some of them, no doubt, would linger for months or possibly a year, but their doom was sealed.

Needless to say that the breakfast of our men went further toward quieting the piteous clamor of these unfortunate people than toward appeasing their own appetite.

This sad experience led me to resolve then and there to ascertain the real cause of famines in India and to devote my life to overcoming this horrible curse.

I was fully aware that the Government was doing everything possible to stop famines, and that I had set myself a stupendous task in trying to do in my subordinate position, single-handedly and without means, what the British Government had not only failed to do with the vast resources at their command; but which evil had actually increased in frequency and severity in spite of all the effort of the Government to prevent it.

As the train pulled out of Shahabad and we left these miserable creatures behind I was heart-sick at the thought of what the people of that vast

Empire had suffered and were suffering, under our paternal Government.

It grieved me to think that as this condition of things had continued to grow worse for the past century, many years must necessarily elapse before I could hope to introduce or to bring into operation any effective measures to overcome these terrible famines.

I was but a young man, nineteen years of age, having no knowledge of India, of the people, of the industries or commerce, or of the natural resources of the country.

Knowledge of all these matters had to be acquired under the greatest possible disadvantages and difficulties. I resolved, however, that I would not leave India until I had solved the problem. In saving India from famine in the future I felt that I had a duty that appealed to me as the grandson of the Empress of India, far more than anything else in the whole of the British Empire could do. I would rather be there living in the humble capacity of a private soldier and enduring the privations of a soldier's life to save those helpless people from famine than lie in luxury and affluence with my royal parents in a palace, ignorant of the actual prevailing conditions of our people.

Thus my secret sorrow was temporarily absorbed in the greater misery of the multitudes of India.

We arrived at Secunderabad on the evening of the day that we left Shahabad, which I think was the 12th day of November, and joined the head-

quarters of the regiment, under the command of Colonel Wetherall. I was attached to C Company, Captain F. F. Johnstone in command. The following day we were busy in getting out our arms and accoutrements and Indian kits preparatory to entering upon military duty for the first time in India.

Secunderabad is the chief military station of the Hyderabad Deccan, the largest and most important of the feudatory States in India; it is situated about three miles north by west of the capital city, Hyderabad.

The garrison was composed of two British infantry regiments, one of British calvary and three batteries of artillery in addition to one regiment of India calvary (Bengal Lancers) and one regiment of Indian infantry, all British troops.

The purpose of the British military force in the independent State of Hyderabad is to protect the Nizam from his own subjects — composed largely of a rebellious race.

Hyderabad is a walled city having a population of about four hundred and fifty thousand.

Owing to the treacherous character of the natives of Hyderabad and their enmity to the British, English soldiers are not allowed to enter the city of Hyderabad without special leave from officers commanding regiments.

One of the first stories that I heard on joining my regiment in reference to the war-like Mohammendans of Hyderabad was about a rebellion in the capital some time prior to my advent in those parts.

The rebels, it was said, had taken possession of the city and Government officers, and had closed and barricaded the gates of the city against the British troops.

Immediately on the receipt of information of the rebellion, the British force was rushed to the capital and took up position around the city walls.

The guns being trained upon the gates and at various points of the walls, word was sent to the rebels to surrender within a given time, failing which the capital would be bombarded.

The rebels held out.

The officer commanding the artillery stood with watch in hand; three minutes only remained to the time limit given; two minutes more, and the British guns would hurl their message of destruction and death into the besieged city; one minute only remained; thirty seconds more; ten seconds; five seconds more; the officer standing ready to close his watch and to give the order: "Fire!"

Suddenly, as if by magic, the gates of the city of Hyderabad were thrown wide open within two seconds from the striking of the hour.

The eagerness with which the troops were waiting for the fray, and their indignation at having been thus hoaxed by the wily Oriental was well illustrated by the effect this sudden turn in affairs produced upon the officer commanding the artillery, who, upon seeing the gates of the city fly open on the stroke of the clock, smashed his gold watch into a thousand pieces on the gun by which he was standing. Thus ended the rebellion of Hyderabad.

To the young soldier on first arriving in India the stories of such expeditions are more or less exciting according to the temperament of the newly arrived.

The stories which produce the greatest effect upon the imagination of the inexperienced recruits are, perhaps, those in which it is shown that rebels are in the habit of frequently visiting the military lines by night, and that they steal into the bungalows by one or more of the dozen doors, and picking the locks of the arm-racks, get clean away with all the rifles of one or more companies without even being heard.

"It sometimes happened," it was said, "that a man or two would awake and, jumping out of bed, would seize the thief, whereupon the Indian would leave his cloak or garment in the hands of his capturer and escape. Other men awakened by the commotion would jump and seize the thief or thieves by their bare arms only to have them slip through their fingers like so many eels, the thieves being well smothered with oil.

A few evenings after joining the regiment, my comrades and I were entertained with the above story. We retired, to dream of savages, and assassins stealing our rifles and then cutting our throats.

About 3.30 A. M., as I was lying in bed, I heard the stealthy step of bare feet upon the brick floor of our barrack room. I was lying on my right side and the footsteps approached nearer to me from the part of the room behind me. What good fortune was mine! Here was an opportunity

to show some of the old soldiers how to capture a slippery savage.

I dared not look around or make the slightest move lest I should give the thief the opportunity to bolt.

Lying perfectly still and feigning to be asleep I waited somewhat impatiently, and, I may confess, more or less excited over the pending adventure. At length, after what seemed to be an eternity the savage was at the foot of my cot. He had taken two paces further when he was struck with a sudden inspiration that the end of the world had come.

Throwing aside my quilts I bounded out of bed and landed him behind the ear with such force that he bounded into the air with a yell that awoke every man in the various bungalows for a mile around. The victim finally landed on the top of a kit box at the foot of a soldier's cot some twelve feet distant from where I met him. Every man in the company was on his feet in a second and rushing to the scene of action.

I was the first, however, to get at the rebel again. Before he could pick himself up, I was upon him, and, knowing that any attempt to arrest him would be futile, as he would leave his garments in my hand and slip through everybody else's fingers like a meteor through the air, the only course open to me was to follow up the tactics which had answered so admirably thus far. Without risking getting the palms of my hands too oily, I closed my fist and again sailed into the intruder, at the same time calling for a rope to tie him up. "You

can't tie a slippery eel," shouted a dozen voices; the only thing to do is to pummel him until he can't run."

A half dozen or more men were upon him almost as soon as myself, and the unfortunate man was getting the lesson of his thieving life.

The Sergeant and Color-Sergeant, aroused by the commotion, came up at the "double quick" just as the corporal punishment had ceased. Being satisfied that there was not much danger of the culprit escaping, I had pushed the men back to stop the onslaught on the unfortunate fellow, and to have him dealt with by the proper authorities. On restoring order, the Color Sergeant commenced the investigation. The trespasser was pulled together, his clothing adjusted and his disheveled hair pushed back from his face that we might get a view of his swarthy and bruised physiognomy. It was a revelation. I had captured and nearly killed—our head cook.

In each company a British soldier is detailed to superintend the cooks of the company.

At the close of each day's work the cook-house is locked up, and the soldier takes charge of the key. He invariably hangs the key near the head of his cot, and the master-cook steps in before daybreak to get the key in order to prepare the early morning coffee served to the men at reveille.

Thereafter our master-cook refrained from passing through the bungalow while the men were asleep.

The serious side of army life is seen on foreign service. While the Empire of India is under Brit-

ish rule, the sixty thousand British troops stationed there are held in readiness to meet any emergency at any hour, day and night. The surprise of 1857, when the troops were at church service and their arms and ammunition in the barracks, the terrible result of the Indian mutiny was a lesson that the British did not want repeated. Hence, even in time of peace, and in our own dominion it was necessary to be as much on the alert as though we were in an enemy's country. This condition of things struck me as being somewhat peculiar and calling for investigation. If the paternal Government of Great Britain was all that it is claimed to be, why should there exist this feeling of political unrest in India, and of distrust on the part of the Government.

What of the famines? What was the cause of them and the loss of millions of our Indian subjects from starvation? Had these famines increased in frequency and severity, as had been said, since the British occupation, and, if so, wherein did our administration come short? If we are responsible for the famines and the consequent sacrifice of a hundred million lives and untold poverty, suffering, and distress, among the three hundred million human beings in India, economic reform rather than force of arms offered the only solution of the problem, if we would continue to rule over India. This was a subject that presented itself for study and consideration.

For a young private soldier subject to the restrictions of military discipline and garrison orders, his limited freedom of action and move-

ments to the confines of the garrison boundary was, in itself, a disadvantage that would deter the boldest spirit from attempting to solve the political and economic problem which all the authorities at the command of the British and Indian Government had not only failed to solve in a hundred years, but which they were evidently getting into a greater tangle from year to year. In addition to the difficulty of my observation being confined to city limits there was the greater difficulty of being only a "common soldier," looked down upon by even the junior subaltern as being something less than human, and by the "dumb millions of India" as a "professional man killer" eagerly awaiting orders to slay them on the least provocation.

This difficulty will be better understood by my readers by the following illustration:

Corporal S——, gymnasium instructor, accompanied by two privates of the Sixteenth Bedfordshire Regiment, one day went out on the innocent sport of catching butterflies, of which some of the most beautiful specimens are found in the vicinity of Secunderabad. The day was hot, and the men, after having wandered over the plains for many hours, were very thirsty. They finally came in view of a toddy-tope, a plantation of cocoanut trees, from the trunks of which a palatable liquid flows on being tapped; earthenware chatties are tied to the tree to catch the toddy, being changed as often as necessary.

The men made for the toddy-tope, hoping to be able to purchase some of this tempting and re-

freshing beverage. On reaching the tope, Corporal S—— approached a native and, offering a rupee (about 33 cents), said they would like to purchase some toddy.

The money tendered was more than the value of a chatty of the beverage. The Indian refused to sell to the white men or to touch the money. He was told that they were parched for a drink and must have it. Again the Indian refused to serve them; whereupon Colonel S—— tossed the rupee on the ground near the man, saying, "I will save you the trouble to climb the tree, I will do it myself," and proceeded to run up the eighty-foot trunk of the cocoanut tree with the agility of a native.

Waiting until Corporal S—— had reached the top of the tree, the Indian raised a yell, which was immediately responded to by hundreds of armed men jumping up from holes in the ground in all directions in the toddy-tope.

Corporal S——, perceiving his predicament, and the danger of his companions, who were unarmed, shouted to them to run for their lives. They protested, but he commanded, saying it was their duty to get away. Being at the entrance of the toddy-tope the way was clear for their retreat, and they made their escape.

By the time Corporal S—— had descended from the tree, it was surrounded by hundreds of bloodthirsty natives, yelling and brandishing their cutlasses.

Corporal S——'s butterfly net with a bamboo handle, one inch thick, was standing against the

tree; seizing the innocent toy, Corporal S—— converted it into a weapon.

Being the instructor in swordsmanship gave him some advantage over his dusky foes. Singling out the leader of this horde, who had a very formidable cutlass, he gave that gentleman a rap on the knuckles of his sword-hand which caused him to throw up his hands and yell "blue murder." His cutlass fell in reach of and was promptly taken up by Corporal S——. That gentleman then set about cutting a way for himself through the dense crowd of enraged natives, which he succeeded in doing, but had to fight every inch of his way toward the barracks for a mile and a half against overwhelming odds.

Having been already parched with thirst before this encounter, Corporal S—— certainly had the time of his life in conquering that crowd without receiving a scratch himself.

When within about a mile and a half of the military garrison the natives fell back, a part of them taking charge of the weapons of the whole. A large body of the natives proceeded to the barracks to lodge a complaint with the officer commanding, against the British soldier for having "murdered and wounded a number of their tribesmen."

The Bedfordshire's regimental call and assembly was sounded, upon which every man in the regiment fell in with their respective companies. Corporal S——, who had had time to refresh himself and to change his clothes, was in his company.

The regiment being formed into lines the natives were instructed to identify the man.

Corporal S—— was identified and placed under arrest, was court-martialed and sentenced to be reduced to the ranks and to serve a term of three years in prison with hard labor, as a deterrent to British soldiers to protect their lives against the murderous assaults of barbarous hordes of savages; but more particularly to appease the natives, who would have avenged themselves on every unfortunate British soldier who might come within their reach had not this man been convicted.

The General commanding the division, in reviewing the court-martial proceedings, took into consideration the plea of self-defense and set aside the finding and sentence of the court-martial.

Corporal S—— was transferred from headquarters.

CHAPTER XVII

MILITARY LIFE IN SECUNDERABAD—I ATTEND MILITARY SCHOOL—I BEGIN THE STUDY OF ORIENTAL LANGUAGES—SORROW AND SOLITUDE—ORDERED TO CANNONORE, MALABAR COAST—INCIDENTS OF MARCH—ELEPHANT RUNS AMUCK IN CAMP!—DIAMOND FIELDS AND RUBY MINES OF INDIA AND BURMA

MILITARY life was very quiet in Secunderabad garrison, the usual morning parade, an occasional field day and the general routine of garrison and regimental guards, pickets and other duties occupied but a small portion of a soldier's time. The morning parade was held before breakfast. The military school for such non-commissioned officers and men who were required to attend to qualify for their examinations was in session from 11 A. M. to 12.30 daily, with the exception of Saturdays and Sundays. The children of the married non-commissioned officers and men attended school from 8.45 to 11 A. M., and from 2 to 3.30 P. M.

The school staff was composed of the regimental schoolmaster and non-commissioned officers duly qualified. The ordinary parade and school hours

take only about two hours and a half to three hours per day, after which time the men were free.

I devoted my spare time to study of ordinary subjects, referred to elsewhere, and also studied Hindoostani under the Moonshee (Hindu teacher of languages).

My mind was, however, constantly preoccupied with thoughts of my mother and her cruel fate. Try as I would I could not overcome my terrible grief for her.

My sorrow of heart further caused me to seek solitude; I accordingly took my books and Testament every day and went out among the rocks on the burning plain, where I could be alone with my thoughts and with God.

Seeking the shelter of some huge rock with which the parched ground was covered for miles around, I spent much time in study and meditation on my peculiar situation and forming plans for the carrying out of my project to ameliorate the condition of the people. The only interruption to my meditation was caused by the huge rock snakes, measuring from twelve to thirty feet in length, and snakes of every description which infested the locality.

Strange as it may seem, I had no fear of these reptiles; and my presence among them did not seem to arouse more than passing curiosity on their part.

Every evening when off duty I attended the religious meetings conducted for the soldiers of the garrison, or at some of the missions or churches of Secunderabad. The religious meetings in the

garrison were held in the meeting-house set apart for the purpose, built on the top of a hill and called Mount Zion.

The meetings were conducted principally by some of the Christian men of the various regiments, and occasionally by the chaplain, and by the different missionaries of the station.

About a fortnight after my arrival in Secunderabad I began to take my turn in leading the meetings.

The English Wesleyan Mission, then in charge of the Rev. Mr. Gladwin, offered an opportunity for good work among the European and Eurasian community. I therefore became a frequent attendant at the Wesleyan Mission House, and was thus afforded many and good opportunities to study the different classes of people, from the European officials down to the native masses, and to observe the customs and manners of the people and the conditions under which they lived.

I made many acquaintances and took the opportunity to familiarize myself with the various views held by different classes as to the cause and effects of the famines; and also the attitude of the Indian population toward British rule, and toward possible Russian invasion of India, which was threatened at that time.

I think it was in the month of April, 1880, that my regiment was ordered to Cannonore, on the Malabar coast. The next week or ten days was busily occupied in packing the military stores and baggage. At length the day arrived for us to leave Secunderabad. Our march commenced, and, curi-

ously enough, the route from Secunderabad, which, as previously stated, is about three miles north by west of Hyderabad, instead of being southwest to reach the west coast was taken eastward to the east coast, for the benefit of exercise of the troops and strategic purposes. From Rajahmundary on the Godavervi River our course was continued south to Pondicherry, a French settlement; from Pondicherry to Cuddalore; thence due west across the Peninsula to Cannonore, on the west coast, about three miles from Calicut.

Reveille sounded sometimes at twelve midnight, sometimes 12.30 or 1 A. M., according to the length of march; coffee was served, after which we struck camp, loaded the baggage on the elephants and our march commenced within forty-five minutes from reveille.

The commissariat department and advance guard preceded the main body by about half an hour. After a march of about ten miles the regiment halted to partake of coffee again. We had half an hour's rest, and then marched to the next encampment, which we reached by about 9 A. M., pitched camp, and rested for the day.

The camp was generally pitched between two towns. As a rule I spent the greater part of the day in exploring the surrounding country, returning about sundown to take a few hours' rest before the next march. In this way I covered each day about three or four times the distance of the actual march.

These excursions gave me some opportunity of visiting towns and villages, historic battlefields

and many places of interest. The whole march was covered without incident worth mentioning, with one exception, and that was a little excitement created by the caper of a "must" elephant.

One afternoon I was returning to camp with a few comrades, and, when passing through the elephant lines, the elephant in question raised his trunk and tore off a bough of a tree. We assumed that he had done this to enable him to feed on the smaller branches; but as we approached within reach of the gentle beast, he made a vicious attack upon us with the said bough. He swung it around with great force; I was on the inner side of the party or nearest to the elephant. The thick end of the bough struck my helmet and knocked it off. Some of my comrades became excited and got out of reach of harm. Upon picking up my helmet, which was somewhat damaged by the onslaught, I could not help expressing my self-congratulation that my headgear was not a low-crowned affair, as in that case, the blow would have taken off the top of my head.

The reveille sounded at twelve o'clock that night, camp was struck, and this particular elephant was detailed to carry my own tent. I assisted in the loading, and was standing by the head of the elephant, which was lying down, when the keeper of the elephant came near me. Like a flash of lightning he disappeared from my side. The elephant, reaching round with his trunk, seized the man by the waist, and, with a terrific trumpeting, raised the unfortunate keeper in the air and bounded off at top speed through the camp. When outside of

the camp the elephant stopped and brought his victim down with such force on the sandy soil that the impact resounded for a mile around with a sickening thud.

The wild run of the elephant caused a stampede among the troops and animals. I stood and watched the beast in its mad career and saw in the moonlight the spectacle of the man raised in the air during the flight, and then brought down to the earth. Upon the instant that he struck the earth the elephant bent his knee upon the chest of his victim and crushed the life out of him; this done he again bounded off, trumpeting and making every effort to bring down his driver. Failing in this, he tore off into the jungle with the deliberate intention of knocking the driver off under the trees. Order was restored in camp and the march commenced to the next camp, leaving the elephant and its driver behind. All through the night the driver stuck to his post. On reaching camp two elephants were detailed to return to bring in the defaulter. They escorted the culprit into camp. He was tried by drumhead court-martial and was sentenced to be flogged and discharged with ignominy from the service.

The elephant prisoner was escorted in, with a very crestfallen demeanor, well knowing what was in store for him.

This elephant had killed at least half a dozen men and the British Government did well in getting rid of him.

The novelty of a twenty-mile march before breakfast may be very interesting once in a while,

but when it is repeated day by day on the dusty roads and in the sultry atmosphere of Southern India, it becomes more or less monotonous. Much of the route was overshadowed by shade trees, altogether unnecessary to us, as we marched by night, and the only effect the trees produced was to break the moonlight and to cast ghostly shadows upon the road, and, at the same time, served as a mantle by which the cloud of dust set up by the feet of a thousand men and several hundred bullock carts, elephants, etc., was deflected upon our unfortunate heads.

The men of the Bedfordshires were as game as any in the British Army, but, naturally, each march saw a few of our men falling out from exhaustion. I was amused on different occasions to find some of my comrades, who had too much grit to report sick, actually marching along the road fast asleep; my right-hand man on one occasion pitched head-over-heels down an embankment while marching asleep.

While the actual marches did not exceed twenty-five miles a day and sometimes not more than twelve, I covered on an average of between twenty and thirty miles per day between the time of arriving in camp at eight A. M. and "tattoo" at eight to nine P. M.

Notwithstanding the facilities for travel in this twentieth century by airships, subterranean tubes and ocean surface motor-boats, and such means of communication as wireless telegraphy, as compared with the antiquated system of travel and communication of fifty years ago, the great ma-

jority of our intelligent and European population still look upon India as being a benighted and heathen country, having only two seasons in the year—nine months hot and three months hotter, and, being populated entirely by blacks. Such was my opinion of India at the time of my arrival in that country. This march and my personal observations convinced me of the general misconception. On passing through Pondicherry, I gave way to the hereditary characteristics of my race. Heretofore we had been marching through a country populated by people of various shades from a pea-nut brown to the Ethiopian ebony, but here in Pondicherry we had a type of beauties that could not be excelled in ancient Rome.

This striking contrast brought me to a realization that vastness and diversity are the most important features of the Indian Empire.

This diversity of race led me, as a youngster, to closer investigation of India, the area and population under British rule. The area of India, or that part of it known as British India, is 1,500,000 square miles; the peninsula is two thousand miles long, and the greatest breadth is also two thousand miles. The population was at that time 287,223,431. This does not, of course, include the 150,000,000 who have been sacrificed to famine and pestilence since the British occupation.

There are one hundred and fifty-seven states and no less than forty-two nationalities or tribes speaking as many different languages.

The climate of India is as diversified as its people, ranging from 128 degrees in the shade on the

plains, to perpetual snow on the Himalaya Mountains.

The soil varies also as much as the climate and the people. In the Middle West and Western States of the United States of America they justly boast of the fertility of the soil and the vast grain fields, but, notwithstanding the richness of the American soil and its abundant crops, the fertility of much of the soil of India equals the most fertile on the American Continent. Again, vast deserts are to be found, where there is no vegetation either for man or beast.

The Indian diamond fields, which have produced the most famous diamonds of the world, will again be re-opened, when we secure proper administration for India. The famous Burma ruby mines are not yet exhausted, notwithstanding all reports to the contrary. Incidentally it may be mentioned the Burma rubies and those of the island of Ceylon are practically identical, while the rubies of Siam, found over an imaginary or defined political boundary line from Burma, are classified as being the most inferior in the world. From the time that Burma annexed a certain portion of Siamese territory, the rubies found in that territory have, of course, been advanced to the quality of Burma rubies.

A personal friend, Moung Gyi, of Maulmein, Burma, spent a great many years in prospecting for rubies in Siam under license of the King of Siam. Specimen stones forwarded to me by Moung Gyi have been declared by the best Euro-

pean and American experts to be the genuine Burma ruby.

As a matter of fact the pigeon-blood corundum, no matter whether from Burma, Ceylon, Siam, or Montana, is commercially a "Burma Ruby."

The march due west across the peninsula to Connonore occupied about a week and we were very pleased to be at the end of our long march.

CHAPTER XVIII

MILITARY DUTIES—INFLUENCE OF MISSIONS ON SOCIAL LIFE OF MILITARY CAMPS—ORIENTAL PHILOSOPHY —I ASSUME THE RÔLE OF "THE WHITE YOGI"

Military duties now again occupied our minds in the usual way. We much enjoyed the sea-bathing, which was more or less enlivened by the prevalence of man-eating sharks off that coast.

In Cannonore we had a branch of the Basil Mission, of which Dr. Weisman was the most active leader. Brother Weisman was a great musician, and formed a choral which met at his residence twice a week; in this choral I figured with Corporal Flowers in the rôle of first tenor. Dr. Weisman's friendship with the "common" soldiers roused the ire of some of the officers, who asked him why he preferred the company of "common soldiers" to that of the officers.

To this query the Doctor replied, "I associatte with 'common soldiers,' as you term them, for the reason that I prefer rather to be in the company of gentlemen than with blackguards."

My associations with Dr. Weisman were of a very pleasant nature and afforded me many opportunities to study the work of that mission.

When the Basil Mission was first established in

India, the Missionary Board in Germany decided that missionaries sent to India should adopt the customs and manners of the people of their respective territories—in short, to live as natives of the provinces, adopting their costumes and domestic life. The missionaries married Indian women, Tamil, Telegu, Maphla, and even the despised Sudra; as a matter of fact, as very few converts were made among the Brahmin and other high-caste Hindoos, the majority of missionaries' wives were from the low castes and the pariah or outcast. After some years' experience this custom was discontinued, and the missionaries were allowed to live according to European customs, and to marry women of their own country.

These marriages were, as a rule, a matter of greater speculation to the missionary than were the marriages contracted with the women of India.

In the latter case he had ample opportunity to study the character of the dusky damsel of his choice, and there were thousands of them for him to select from; whereas brides from Germany were, in many cases, arranged for by proxy, and the missionary had no opportunity to see his future bride until she landed at his station in India, when the marriage ceremony was immediately arranged.

The wife of my friend, Dr. Weisman, was sent out to him in this manner; he knew nothing of her previous to her arrival in India for the marriage ceremony. It is remarkable that such marriages invariably prove to be happy unions.

He explained to me that he was very well satis-

fied with the choice made for him, both as to quantity and quality, for his wife was a large woman, while he was small of stature.

In Cannonore our missionary meetings were held every night in the week, the Rev. Mr. Stocking, a descendant of the old-time Missionary Indian Marriage System, who had charge of the local mission under the direction of other missionaries. These meetings were attended by both military and civil European, Eurasian and Indian Christians, and gave me an opportunity to make many pleasant acquaintances, which enabled me to come in close touch with the various classes and to study the domestic and economic conditions of the country.

At Calicut, a few miles from Cannonore, the Basil Mission had an extensive weaving establishment, an institution which was very beneficial to the Indian converts.

* * * * * * *

The practice of the Indian Yogi in the application of so-called charms, ceremonials and incantations of magic and mystery for the treatment of disease has ever been universally condemned by the regular physicians of Europe and America.

The following extract taken from the medical encyclopedia by one of the most progressive and successful physicians of America, the late R. T. Trall, M. D., is a fair expression of the sentiments of the Occidental medical profession on this subject.

In the part treating on "Medical History," we find the following: "The diligent student of medi-

cal history cannot fail to discover that the ancient and more ignorant practitioners were more successful in curing diseases than are the modern and wiser physicians."

The reader will observe that the poor "ignorant" and "superstitious" physician of a less civilized age had much more to be thankful for than his "modern and wiser" medical brethren, viz., greater success as a scientist with his so-called "ignorance," than the modern physician with his so-called wisdom. This fact evidently did not escape Dr. Trall, as shown by the following qualification, which is equally absurd.

"The remedial agents of the ancients were comparatively inert and comparatively harmless, and, while they inspired their patients with a due degree of confidence and hope by the charms and ceremonials of magic and mystery, they really relied on judicious hygienic regulations to aid and assist nature in effecting the cure.

"Modern intelligence repudiates the arts and incantations of a less civilized age; and in their stead has substituted the stronger potencies of modern invention, while the habits of living and thinking with medical, as well as with other men, have become so unnatural and artificial that, in managing diseases, hygienic agencies are almost wholly overlooked."

It is customary to offer prayers for the sick throughout the Christian world. That is quite right. But, if the Oriental prays or intones thus: "Please have mercy, O God! Please have mercy, O God! Please have mercy, O God;" or, again,

"Please give strength, O God! Please give strength, O God! Please give strength, O God!" they are uttering "incantations or ceremonials of magic and mystery."

In the year 1903 a number of medical societies in the United States of America adopted a resolution requesting the establishment of a psychophysical laboratory in the Department of the Interior, at Washington, D. C., for the practical application of physiologcal-psychology to abnormal or pathological data, such as is found in public institutions for the criminal insane, and as observed in hospitals and schools, and in the defective classes generally."

Practically all universities in the civilized world now have chairs of psychology. But, the *masters* of psychology, physiological-psychology, and transcendental-psychology in India, where the science was cradled and brought to a perfection as far transcending the superficial knowledge of the Occidental "Professor" as the light of the sun transcends that of the twinkling star, are still performing their "incantations and ceremonials of magic and mystery."

As previously stated, one of the objects of my being in India was to seek enlightenment as to the nature and value of the "arts, charms, incantations, and ceremonials of magic and mystery."

About the month of August, 1880, I had my first opportunity to apply the "ceremonials," or, if I may be permitted the scientific term "physiological-psychology," to abnormal pathological data.

My first case was that of Private Ely Story, age

twenty-four, Company C, Second Battalion, Bedfordshires, at Cannonore.

Private Story was not only a temperate but a religious man, of a very quiet demeanor and amiable disposition. It had been noticed that Story had been quieter than usual for some weeks previous to the incident I am about to relate.

One morning before reveille the whole regiment was aroused by a maniacal yell that made every man shudder. The next instant a couple of hundred men jumped from their beds and darted off in hot pursuit of Private Story, whose mind had been affected by the sun.

Two or three hundred flying shirt-tails, vainly trying to overtake their owners in their headlong rush across the barrack square, was an exhibition that I had not seen equalled on any stage in Europe or America; even Coney Island, New York, can not boast of such a spectacle.

The flying legs represented the long and short, the thick and thin of Her Majesty's Second "Beds," and as I witnessed it I could not help but wish that Her Majesty had been present to review this impromptu shirt-tail parade.

The unfortunate patient reached the bath-houses well in the lead of the foremost of his pursuers, where he most effectually barricaded himself against capture.

I was sleeping in the same room as the patient, but waited to partially dress myself before going out. I then went over to the bath-houses, where, by the time I arrived, about one-half of the regiment, attired and unattired, were endeavoring to

gain admission by the doors and windows. One would have supposed that the whole noisy mob had just been let loose from "Bedlam."

The pounding on doors and windows, and the shouting was sufficient to drive even a sane man crazy.

As practically all the senior non-commissioned officers of the company were present, I, being merely a recruit, had no right to assume command. However, I called for silence and ordered the men from the doors and windows.

I suggested that some of them would look better if they would return to their rooms and put on Her Majesty's uniform; then, turning to the color sergeant, I said, "Make the men retire and I will attend to Story."

Order having been restored, I called, very quietly, "Ely!" A few seconds later Ely's face appeared at the window at which I was gazing. Without noticing the crowd of men, Story looked directly at me. I simply said in a quiet tone, "Come!" He immediately climbed down from the window and opened the door. I received him at the door, placing my arm in a brotherly way about his shoulders. I thus escorted him through the astonished crowd, which he did not appear to notice in any way; nor did he speak. On reaching the barrack-room, I dressed him and took him to the military hospital by order of the Color Sergeant.

He was admitted to the hospital and duly registered as a mental case. Two men were detailed to be with him constantly in a private ward. For

a number of days I was the only person whose presence the patient seemed to recognize.

He would do anything I asked him to do, but only spoke incoherently.

My power was recognized, and I was accordingly allowed to attend to him at any time, day or night. I made frequent visits and devoted considerable time to my comrade. In about a week Story was once more in his normal mental and physical condition. In another week he was discharged from the hospital, cured. Story continued thereafter in perfect health during the remaining years of his service.

Reference to the regimental and hospital records will substantiate the above account. My connection with the case was widely discussed in the regiment, and that and other incidents unfortunately caused me to be "dubbed" in the regiment with the sobriquet of "Jesus Christ," and later, by the Indians, "The White Yogi," and the "Great Royal Physician."

CHAPTER XIX

AT MALLIAPURAM—I VISIT THE WARLIKE MAPHLAS—IN MAPHLA TOWN—THE SACRED TEMPLE OF TALLIPARAMBA—A PERSONAL ENCOUNTER WITH TIGER—IN BED WITH A COBRA

After about six months in Cannonore I was ordered with my company, to Malliapuram, a detachment furnished from the garrison of Cannonore.

The inhabitants of this district were principally the Maphla tribe, which has probably given the British Government more trouble than any other race in India. A short time before my company was sent there a rebellion took place and the barracks of the British troops were destroyed by fire by the Maphlas.

The only buildings left standing were the married quarters, which were later occupied by the troops. Many British soldiers, it was said, had lost their lives or had mysteriously disappeared by venturing into Maphla town.

The district at the time I arrived was "out of bounds." In other words, there was a regimental order prohibiting soldiers from entering Maphla town.

The military order in question did not prevent my venturing into this district, from which it was

said no individual soldier ever returned. One morning about nine o'clock, I entered Maphla town. The principal thoroughfare is a narrow street, a little more than a mile in length. I had proceeded only about twenty yards when a Maphla called to me from an upper window, and speaking in English ordered me to go back; at the same time asking me if I did not know that I was in Maphla town, and that no white man ever succeeded in passing to the end of the street, or in returning.

I replied to him in Hindoostani that I had heard about Maphla Town and the Maphla people, and that as I was interested in all that I had heard of their daring attacks on individual soldiers and also upon the garrison from time to time; I wanted to know more of this warlike race from personal observation. The man showed great apparent concern and repeatedly urged upon me to leave the place while I had the opportunity.

He called my attention to the large number of men congregating on either side of the street at a cross-road about half way through the town.

He said, "You see the number of men is increasing. All the Maphlas are gathering at the cross-roads. There are many more on either side whom you can not see. You can not go past them. You will disappear either to the right or to the left."

I smilingly assured him that I did not believe that his people were quite as bad as they had been painted. If they had molested soldiers in their town or had attacked the troops that were in gar-

rison such attacks had originated through some imaginary or actual grievance. They would soon see that they could have no cause for offense at my presence among them, for the reason that I neither intended to offer nor take offense. "My visit is made in consequence of the interest I have in the welfare of your people, and your friendly advice to me assures me that my confidence in the Maphlas is not misplaced." With a respectful salaam, he left the window.

When I entered the street it was a busy thoroughfare; with the exception of the gathering crowd of men at the cross-way referred to, the street was deserted. As I walked along, casually glancing at the houses, I observed that while quietness reigned supreme there were people quietly watching my approach; and, as I got further down the street I observed that business had been resumed in my rear, while the number of men at the crossing showed signs of restless activity, some disappearing around the corners as others appeared.

It was apparent to me that an attack was intended and that the resumption of business activity and noise, made by the venders, was intended to cover the assault from observation from the outskirts of the town. When I came to within thirty yards of the cross-road about fifty men were in view on either side and evidence of a number being behind or in the buildings. After having advanced about ten paces more, the Maphlas came into the open and formed a line across the street. On either side of the street business had now been

resumed. I went up to a fruit vender on the right-hand side and purchased some green cocoanuts, bananas and other fruits and asked the fruit vender to kindly present them with my compliments to his fellow people, and to thank them for the courtesy they had shown me in having thus left their business to accord me so hearty a reception; to say that I appreciated the honor paid to me and regretted that my limited knowledge of the language did not admit of my giving any adequate expression of my appreciation of their loyalty and friendship.

The astonished fruit vender looked at me as though he wondered whether I had taken leave of my senses, or, if I really thought the town had turned out in my honor.

The natural politeness characteristic in the Asiatic races asserted itself in my friend the fruit vender, and, stepping from the porch he approached certain men whom I had already singled out as the chiefs of the town. He delivered my message of thanks and informed them of my gift of fruits. I had myself approached the party before the chiefs had recovered from their surprise, and invited them to step to the store and accept of my hospitality of refreshing milk from the green cocoanuts and other fruits.

The party then came to the fruit vender's and enjoyed the cocoanut milk; there not being enough cocoanuts to go round, a larger supply was brought from the neighboring bazaar. The Maphla chief insisted upon paying for the major portion of the fruit.

A moment or two after the invitation to my newly-made friends, my former acquaintance of the window dialogue approached me with a profound salaam, and congratulated me upon my fearlessness and graciousness, both of which qualities, the Maphlas, as a race, ardently admire, and assured me that I would always be welcome in Maphla Town.

Some of the leading men, including my first acquaintance, whose names I can not recall, as the incident occurred about twenty-eight years ago, escorted me to the other end of the town and showed me every courtesy.

The above incident and many other observations in various parts of India during my long experience in that country convinced me many years ago that the solution of the problem of the peaceful and successful administration of the Indian Empire; the removal of famines and promotion of prosperity amongst its three hundred millions inhabitants, lies not in the "mailed hand" represented by the 60,000 British troops and an Indian Army, but in the establishment of equity and justice in our commercial and political relations within the Empire; so, too, the solution of the perplexing problem of universal peace, now agitating the civilized world, lies in the establishment of the "Reign of the Law"—Equity and Justice in the administration of political and commercial relations in and between the great centers of Occidental and Oriental civilization.

My experience in Malliapuram was pleasant. I went about a great deal in the surrounding coun-

try where the British soldier had never been in the memory of some of the oldest residents.

On one occasion I paid a visit in company with my faithful comrade and friend, Benjamin Hornett, to Talliparamba, about sixteen miles distant.

That the people of this quaint religious town had never seen a white man, with the exception of our friend the missionary, Dr. Weismann, may be seen from the fact that half the town came out at least a mile to meet us when they saw us coming along the road toward the town. We visited the Mission there, where Dr. Weismann was staying at the time.

Each time we went out to see the interesting sights of the surrounding country, of which we could get a splendid view from the surrounding hills, hundreds of natives followed at a respectful distance. There is a temple standing on a hill, which is closed to all but the faithful. Dr. Weismann presented a deputation of the principal representatives of the town, who were much pleased at our voluntary assurance that we respected the religious faith of all people as we did also their sacred temples, and that we recognized the truth of the text of their sacred

Rig Veda X, 82, 3.

"He who is our Father that begot us, He who is the Creator,
He who knows all places and all creatures,
He who gave names to the gods, being One *only*,
To Him all creatures go, to ask HIM."

Ekam eva advitiyam—"There is but ONE BEING, no second."

And we hold that *religion* is broad enough to accept the spirit of the following beautiful lines:

"There is, we know, one primitive and sure religion pure—
Unchanged in spirit, though its forms and codes wear myriad modes—
Contains all creeds within its mighty span—
The love of God displayed in love for man."

One afternoon, shortly after my arrival in Malliapuram, when passing the barracks to my quarters, I met the officer commanding the station, Major F. F. Johnstone. Saluting him, I was about to pass on my way when he interrupted me with the surprising question, "Corporal Norman, where are your stripes?"

"I replied that the only stripes I had were in my trousers, unless he took my good-conduct badge for a corporal's stripe."

If I was surprised at the question, a greater surprise was quickly to follow. His next remark was, "You are in orders to-day for lance-corporal. You ought to have been shown the orders. Go at once to the tailor's shop and have your stripes attached."

"But, sir, I have protested for the last three years that I did not wish for promotion."

"Yes, sir, I know you have; and had you not

been such a fool in having refused promotion you would have had a commission by this time instead of a lance-corporal's stripe. Promotion goes very slowly in India, but I congratulate you in having won the respect and confidence of the officers, non-commissioned officers, and men to the extent that the first step has been given you without your knowledge or application; I wish you every success."

Two incidents occurred shortly after this which threatened in each case to bring my career as a non-commissioned officer to a sudden end.

The first incident occurred the day following my promotion. It was my first experience as commander of the guard, having charge of all the detachment posts.

After having posted my sentries at 2 A. M., I threw myself upon my cot, which was standing across the open door of the guard room, in order to receive the full benefit of the fresh air. I was, of course, fully dressed and wearing my side arms, prepared to turn out at any instant.

The officer of the day might visit the guard, or an alarm might be given at any moment; but, failing these I was free to take a nap until time to send out relief sentries at 4 A. M., unless I should wish to go my rounds of the sentries in the meantime.

I was enjoying a quiet doze, a light sleep through which I could distinctly hear the sentry pacing to and fro just in front of the guard-room about 3 A. M.

His post extended only about fifteen paces to

the right and left of the guard-room door. Hence very little danger of the guard being surprised without knowledge of the sentry. My nap was suddenly terminated by something bounding onto my cot. I was conscious that the creature, whatever it might be, was in search of prey, and that it was standing over me, as I felt its heated breath close to my face.

Opening my eyes, I looked up to see—the dreaded tiger which had been terrorizing the town and which a number of officers and men had been hunting with rifles for two days. The beast had me at a disadvantage, as his position, standing across my body, rendered it impossible for me to seize him by the throat or to move without the brute anticipating my action. My only chance seemed to be that the sentry, looking in at the door as he passed, could shoot the beast as he stood over me, but this was only problematical, as his attention is supposed to be directed in any other quarter than gaping into the guard room.

I accordingly struck up friendly relations with my visitor. As I heard the sentry approaching the door, I said, "Hello! Tiger, old man, how are you?"

The sentry, thinking I was talking in my sleep, was about to pass by, but casually glanced in at the door. There was a light in the guard-room, and he was only five paces from me. He was horrified at what he saw and halted. I gave a quiet order: "Load, and fire!"

He brought his rifle to the "ready," and opened the breech to load, when the tiger, thinking dis-

cretion the better part of valor, bounded off my cot and out of the open door, passing the sentry before that astonished individual could thrust him with his bayonet.

The beast had again escaped—and so had I escaped a most horrible death from hydrophobia,—for Tiger was a huge mad dog. He had hitherto been the Mascot of the regiment, and was named "Tiger," as he bore a striking resemblance to the tiger in size, color and strength. Tiger was the property of a bugler. Any pensioner of the Bedfordshires who served at Malliapuram at that time will recall both the faithful Mascot, the above incident and the sad end of old "Tiger." He was shot by a search party later in the day.

A few days later I was placed in charge of the regimental post-office and coffee-shop, which stood in an isolated place on the bank of the river.

Immediately behind the building was a steep embankment of about a hundred feet, densely covered with an undergrowth, forming a safe retreat for thousands of reptiles and wild beasts. The barracks formerly destroyed by the Maphlas had stood on the wide area which now separated me from the regimental quarters.

A few nights after taking charge of my new duties I had undressed and put out the light preparatory to retiring. It being the hot season I threw back the sheet and stretched my weary body on the bed. I had no sooner done so, however, than I had a sudden inspiration to get up again. As a student of psychology I had frequently profited by my knowledge of physiological-psychology, but at

last I had embraced the wisdom of the serpent—I was not only lying with, but on, a deadly cobra.

The blissful communion of "a man and a maid" bears no comparison with the psychological effect on "a man with a cobra."

As with the one so with the other, they are branches of transcendental knowledge attained only by experience. The magical sensation experienced by a weary warrior when he feels the circle or coil of wisdom—the clammy folds of a serpent in communion with the lumbar regions of his psycho-physical being must be experienced to be appreciated.

I can only say that the intercommunion so electrifies and vitalizes the highest cortical centers that perfect connection between mind and matter is established like a flash of chain lightning, and, lo! the man of knowledge has become "as wise as a serpent"—the natural issue of the social congress. Moral.—Let him who seeks wisdom, go to Eden, and, like Adam, embrace the serpent.

CHAPTER XX

A FALSE ALARM!—THE BLIND MISSIONARY—A TRUE ROMANCE—I REFUSE THE MANAGEMENT OF A LARGE TEA AND COFFEE PLANTATION—"PANGS OF REGRET"

When taking over my duties as manager of the regimental post-office and coffee-shop I was advised to be on the alert for hostile Maphlas, who prowled about the military lines at night. One night, shortly after midnight, I was awakened by stealthy footsteps of some bare-footed person or persons at the back of my quarters. Taking my rifle and twenty rounds of ammunition, I went outside to investigate without attempting to awaken my assistant, lest in doing so I should alarm the enemy.

Should his assistance be necessary the first shot would call him and the whole garrison to arms.

All was clear in front of the building; the intruders were now coming along the north side, evidently to attack either through the north window or for the purpose of entering the front door. It may be stated that owing to the heat both door and windows were open.

To forestall an attack through the window, which might prove fatal to my assistant, Private

Cooper, I turned the corner and brought my rifle to my shoulder, covering the man who was then looking in at the window. My sudden movement so startled the disturber of my peaceful slumbers that he jumped and yelled as I thought only a frightened man could yell. Not wishing to send a man into the next world while laboring under such a mental shock, I spared his life. It was—Private Cooper taking a little fresh air in his pajamas, contrary to orders.

In the latter part of 1881, not having yet become acclimated, and having suffered as most men do from the change of climate and mode of life during the first two years, I was ordered to the Health Station of Wellington, near Ootacamund. This Health Station serves for all troops in the South West of India.

I became an assistant master in the military school, where I remained through my first season in Wellington.

As the junior member of the teachers' staff and as the junior non-commissioned officer, I was assigned to the primary grade with the children and to the fourth grade of the men. In the absence of the head master from his class in the High School with the children and the first and second grades for non-commissioned officers, it was customary to have the first assistant master, a sergeant, take his classes. A few days after my appointment I called to take charge of the head master's classes over the heads of my superiors.

During my second season, I was in the paymaster's office. My evenings were mostly spent in

participating in missionary meetings at Coonoor, about three miles distant from Wellington, or attending choral practice and social gatherings, being a member of the church choir; the Rev. Mr. Browne was the army chaplain at that time, and thus passed a most enjoyable and edifying time.

It was my custom to go up to Ootacamund every Saturday afternoon, situated about ten miles further up the Ghats from Wellington, to remain over the week-end. The reader will probably be of the opinion that there must have been some great attraction to induce me to take a weekly climb from ten to twelve miles up the mountain side. To satisfy their curiosity I will relate what the attraction was.

The pastor of the English Baptist Church of Ootacamund at that time was the Rev. Mr. Pearce, who was spending the "winter" of his long missionary service in the peace and quietude of that European settlement in the bosom of the Nilgiri Hills.

Mr. Pearce has, no doubt, long since gone to his reward for his long labors in the Master's vineyard, for at that time in 1881-2 he was well beyond the age of four score years.

He was totally blind and rather feeble. It was a joy to him, however, to continue in the pastorate of his church, notwithstanding his great age and sore affliction. It was my pleasure and privilege to read from the Scriptures and other works to him, and the greater privilege of profiting by the wise and fatherly counsels of that saintly patriarch. It was also my pleasure to assist the pastor

at the church services on each Sabbath; the reading of the lessons and hymns falling to me.

I can not touch upon the social privileges afforded by the many pleasant associations in Ootacamund without first paying due honor to the loving devotion of Mrs. Peabody-Pearce to her husband.

Mrs. Pearce herself had been for many years a missionary in India. She was less than one-half the age of Mr. Pearce, whom she married when he was over eighty years of age, blind, and otherwise afflicted, in order that she might nurse him and care for him during his last days on earth. Words utterly fail to adequately express the devoted manner in which she carried out this self-imposed service to the aged man of God. I can only describe their home as being the nearest approach to the "Holy of Holies" of anything of which it is possible to conceive upon earth. Mrs. Pearce is an American lady, and related to the celebrated Peabody family, of which the inventor of the famous Peabody rifle was also a member.

Mrs. Pearce, I have no doubt, is still living at "Woodend," a beautiful bungalow in Octacamund, the building of which I was privileged to assist in supervising in the year 1882.

I received an invitation to spend some weeks with my friends, the Rev. and Mrs. Pearce, an invitation which I highly appreciated and accepted. I arrived on Saturday evening. Many distinguished guests were present from Octacamund and elsewhere; among others was a young and most beautiful French widow, whose name for ob-

vious reasons I will omit. The responsibility of the management of a very large estate had been thrust upon her by the death of her husband, a great undertaking for a lady so young and lovely, as the successful management of such an estate necessarily involves not only experience, but constant supervision over a large number of coolies, scattered over a vast area, and the thousand and one duties connected with the business of the estate.

One morning Mrs. Peabody-Pearce surprised me by stating that my French friend, Madame ——, had expressed a wish that I would undertake the management of her tea and coffee plantation.

Looking at Mrs. Pearce, I replied, "I am surprised that Madame —— should have made such a request. She is so talented and accomplished and such a good business woman that I can not understand why she should desire to place her large estate in the hands of a young and inexperienced man like me. She needs the friendly counsel of older heads. Please advise her to obtain the services of a thoroughly experienced man to take charge of her estate. She can not be too careful in selecting a man for such a responsible position. I would suggest that she communicate with some reputable agents to secure the services of a man of integrity, one who can be relied upon to protect her interests."

"But," persisted Mrs. Pearce, "Madame —— says she can rely upon *you* to protect her interests. She wants *you* to manage her estate. She is quite aware that you are inexperienced in the

management of tea and coffee plantations, but she says, and I agree with her, that after two or three years' experience you would be a past master in the business of tea and coffee raising" (this with a smile).

"It is inconceivable," I said, "why Madame —— should put herself to the unnecessary expense of paying double salaries during the time I would be learning the business, when she can at once obtain the services of a proficient manager."

Mrs. Pearce smiled and said, "I fear that you are almost as inexperienced in the ways of a woman as you are in growing coffee. To speak plainly, Madame —— has fallen in love with you and wants you to manage her. She appreciates your gentlemanly bearing and courtesy to the ladies, and I take this opportunity to thank you for your tact and diplomacy in the company of my guests and the young ladies of my school (referring to the Young Ladies' Seminary of which she was principal). I hope you will see more of Madame —— and that you will, in due time, become the proprietor of the estate."

Much to Mrs. Pearce's surprise, and to Madame ——'s grief, I explained that it was utterly impossible for me to think of marriage at that time. I could not help but admire Madame —— very much and wished I could serve her, but that I owed my duty to my country, the details of which I could not explain, and that in carrying out my duty to my country, I was also performing a most sacred duty to my mother. Personal in-

terests and feelings could not, therefore, be taken into consideration at the expense of duty.

Madame ——, although much affected by the disappointment, expressed her appreciation of my sentiments. I am not ashamed to acknowledge that I had, myself, fallen in love with the beautiful French lady before I learned anything about her estates or wealth, and that it was not without a pang of regret that I had to turn from a love so noble as that offered to me in this remarkable manner.

CHAPTER XXI

I REJOIN MY REGIMENT—MILITARY LIFE IN BURMA—AN EXCITING TIME WITH A COMPANY OF MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY—I LEAVE THE ARMY—APPOINTED INSPECTOR OF POLICE—AN EXCITING ARREST

EARLY in 1883, I bade good-bye to my friends of Ootacamund and Wellington to rejoin the headquarters of my regiment, which during my absence had removed from the Malabar coast to Thayetmye (Taw-Kyoung), then the frontier station of lower Burma. Here, for the first time in my service, I was assigned to regimental duty.

A few days after joining my regiment I passed my final examination in military tactics as company and battalion commander. I was, shortly afterwards, promoted to the rank of corporal and assigned to Company G., Captain W. A. Aldworth. I took up the study of the Burmese language as well as that of the customs and manners of the people and their religion, Buddhism. Here, again, I was a member of the church choir of the late Rev. Mr. Briscoe, Army Chaplain.

In Thayetmyo our missionary meetings were attended by many Eurasians, which new associa-

tions afforded me a channel through which to come in closer contact with the Burmese than I could otherwise have done while in the British service.

A very pathetic case of the tragic death, following a remarkable dream, of one of our men is of such value to psychologists that I will relate it.

Private ———'s (whose name I do not recall, but which case can be easily verified) cot was next to mine in the barrack-room, of which I had charge. On the day in question a sham battle was ordered. My regiment was to form part of the invading army to capture the garrison town of Thayetmyo. Revielle sounded about 1.30 A. M. On getting up to dress for the field-day, Private ——— came to me and explained that he had had a dream which made him feel very bad. I asked him to relate the dream to me, and added that if there was any way in which I could relieve his mind I would be pleased to do so. Being thus encouraged he stated as follows:

"I dreamed that we had marched out from the barracks to the country and after having been formed in order for attack upon the Thayetmyo Fort, the return march was commenced. I was attached to the section of which you had command in escalading the walls of the fort. The attack in our advance across the open plain to the Fort was all very vivid to me. At length we reached the moat under heavy fire from the artillery and infantry defending the fort. The attacking party reached the walls in good order; escalading ladders were placed against the wall. As I said be-

fore, I was with your section in the escalading party; you, being in command, were the first to ascend the ladder. I followed at your heels. As you stepped onto the rampart I had reached the top of the ladder, and, as you stepped to the right, I stepped onto the parapet. I had no sooner done so than I was killed by the gun trained over our ladder.

"I am not superstitious and much less a coward, but, you know I have served ten months over my time and go home by the first troop-ship next month. My dear old mother has been counting the days for more than a year, thinking, of course, that I ought to have been sent home when my time was up. It would be a terrible blow to her if I should not go home."

On hearing the recital of this dream, and remembering equally remarkable dreams of my own which had come true, I called the orderly corporal and ordered him to put Private ———'s name on the sick list. This action satisfied Private ——— for the time being, but, about ten minutes before time for the parade, he said, "I am not sick, and can not shirk my duty even though it be only that of a field-day, on account of a dream."

He insisted upon attending parade and was killed exactly as he had foreseen, as he stepped on the rampart the instant I had made room for him to step from the ladder.

This sad fatality was the fault of the gunners who had trained their guns immediately over our ladder, or rather, on the point at which my men would step off. This was contrary to military

field-day regulations. The parade was under the command of Major General Prendergast.

At a sham fight in Thayetmyo I was placed in command of a detachment of the Bedfordshires and ordered to attack, and, if possible, capture a company of the 28th Madras Native Infantry of the opposing force. Having driven them from their fortified position, I pursued them across the open plain, and thus put them out of action. The military umpires ordered the buglers to sound the "cease fire" and "retreat" for the 28th Madras Native Infantry. The Madrases, however, refused to obey orders and continued their fire. The Madras blood was up and as they could not be killed by blank ammunition, they continued to blaze away. Being hard pressed, they finally retreated in disorder to the compound of a neighboring bungalow after having been driven about a mile and a half across the plains.

The Bedfordshires in close pursuit were drawn up in front of the wide gate-way before the 28th was prepared for action. I ordered the 28th to "Ground Arms." Instead of obeying this order the officer in charge, who was, like his men, much excited, gave the order, "28th, fix bayonets!"

It is against orders to "fix bayonets" during a sham fight. It is also against orders for troops to carry ball cartridges on such a field-day (the wisdom of such an order, considering the church parade surprise to the British troops in 1857, is to be questioned). The action of the 28th was, therefore, of a mutinous character, and had to be nipped in the bud; I accordingly determined to

give the 28th the scare of their lives. I was credited with having as powerful a word of command as any officer in the garrison. My next command rang out over the plains causing a sensation among the umpires and the general staff, then galloping at top speed toward the scene of mutiny; the command was, "Bedfordshires, fix bayonets!" "Fire a volley and charge!" "With *ball* cartridge, load!" "Present!" "Fire!!"

The umpires had by this time thundered up to the adobe wall surrounding the compound, only to find all the fight taken out of the Madras Native Infantry. Needless to say the (*ball*) cartridge existed only in the word of command; but the psychological effect produced on the Madras Infantry would form an amusing subject for the vitograph.

The officer commanding the 28th was placed under arrest for disobedience of orders, while I was complimented for the tact displayed by my ruse.

The political unrest in Burma and the conditions under which the people lived caused me to wish for better facilities for investigation than those afforded to me under the restrictions of military discipline and the disadvantages of being a soldier against which profession much prejudice existed among the people.

In the month of October, 1884, I purchased my discharge from the army, much against the wish of my commanding officer and the officers of my company. In January, 1885, I was appointed Inspector of Police and assigned to duty as ship-

ping inspector at Bassein, on the Bassein River. The principal shipping at Bassein is rice, which is shipped to the principal markets of the world.

My office as shipping inspector afforded me the opportunity to study one of the principal industries of the country,—the rice trade, and also to familiarize myself with the real cause of famines in India. The Government reports published in the official Blue Books show that from 1861 the deficiency of the rainfall in the districts affected by famine was never more than such as would cause a temporary lift in prices. The late William Digby, C. I. E., who was one of the greatest authorities on the economic conditions and famines of India, said the increasing frequency and severity of famines in India must be attributed to our system of administration of that Empire. In view of the fact that the British Government had spent several hundred million dollars and had constructed the most elaborate irrigation system in the world, advantages not enjoyed previous to the British occupation when famines were much less frequent, it became apparent to me that the principal cause of this scourge, through which over a hundred million lives had been sacrificed, must be looked for somewhere outside of the administration. It did not take me long to discover that the real cause of the terrible famines and the consequent wanton sacrifice of life was due to the White Peril in India! Not to British rule or British administration of the domestic affairs of that vast Empire, but to the rapacity of so-called

Christian merchants. The White Peril of Robbery in the name of commerce!

When capital and influence combine in nefarious intrigue against the Government, the best efforts of the administration to ameliorate the condition of the people are rendered ineffective.

Much is said against trusts and monopolistic corporations.

The laws of Great Britain, which also apply to India, are rigidly enforced against monopoly in trade.

It should be borne in mind that the evils arising from monopoly are due to the dishonesty of the rapacious beasts of prey, called princes of commerce!

Monopoly in the various lines of commerce, conducted on the lines of co-operative public service organizations under *honest* and conservative management and progressive policy, would be the greatest boon to the human race.

Who are the commercial filibusters in India, who despoil the unfortunate people of their property and their very means of existence? Are they British merchants and millers?

If the reader will refer to the business directories of Rangoon, Bassein and Akyab, in Burma, and of the large centres of India, he will find that, with one exception, the rice millers in Burma are all foreign corporations and firms, principally, if not exclusively, Germans; the one exception being a Chinese firm; foreigners also control the milling business throughout India.

To evade the law prohibiting monopoly in trade,

the various rice millers enter into a *private* agreement to control the price of paddy (unhusked rice) the price agreed upon ranging anywhere from sixty per cent. to seventy-five per cent. of the actual cost of production. The same rule applies to the wheat millers in the northwest and in the Punjab, and in fact throughout India, as it does elsewhere; which means that every grain of rice and wheat cultivated in India is produced at the cost of the sweat of the Indians' brow, and principally for exportation without either paying the market value for the commodity to the purchaser or a living wage to the unfortunate coolies in the rice and grain fields.

About four o'clock one Sunday afternoon in the month of May, 1885, I was in the main street in Bassein when a man reported that a lot of European sailors had murdered a man in one of the outlying districts of the town. Sending my orderly at the double to call the reserves from the guard, I proceeded to the scene of the crime, expecting that my men would reach there by a different route about the same time as myself. I had reached the end of the town, followed by a crowd of Burmese, and was proceeding along a lonely road when a gang of thirteen half-drunken sailors armed with sticks, whisky bottles, bottles of soda-water, jack-knives and other weapons came into view from a turn in the road ahead of me. I was unarmed, and with the exception of one pair of handcuffs, had no means to secure so many men even if I could arrest them. I was in mufti, and decided to pass through the crowd. One of the

gang, however, identified me and with an oath threw a bottle of soda-water at my head. The air seemed alive with bottles and sticks for a few seconds. I arrested my foremost assailant, handcuffed him and threw him to the ground. His twelve infuriated companions while waiting their turn for arrest, amused themselves by disposing of their stock of bottles of soda-water by throwing the same at my head. Sticks were then brought into play and jack-knives flashed in the air.

I seized one man who appeared to be the ringleader of the crowd, and called to a Burman to lend me his goungboung (turban). He threw it to me. With this I tied the hands of my prisoner behind him and threw him down. Other Burmans came forward with their turbans, and I had arrested and secured eleven of the thirteen sailors when the men arrived.

On seeing the approach of the police in force, two men ran away. I ordered the removal of the eleven to the police station, and then went in pursuit of the other two. About three-quarters of a mile from the starting point I discovered one of the men whose escape had been obstructed by a lot of Burmans; I arrested him, tied him up and, having made him over to a couple of constables, again took up the chase for the thirteenth man. I overtook him at the highest point of a bridge, where he turned to make his last stand. He was a red-headed Norwegian, six feet four inches and one-half in height, and a big muscular fellow. I could not help but smile as I ran up the grade to

see this giant with his arms swinging wildly over his head with a whisky bottle in one hand and a bottle of soda in the other.

Hundreds of Burmese had followed me in the chase; the noise and din that they set up was finally drowned by a sound that seemed like a roll of thunder or an explosion. The Norwegian had been lifted off his feet and had struck on the road over the culvert. The report called forth applause from the crowd.

The sequel to the foregoing adventure nearly lost me my official head as an Inspector of Police.

The senior inspector who happened to have been out of town at the time the arrest was made, and who feared a reprimand for his absence, dispatched me to make an important gambling raid, saying that he would attend to the making up of the charge sheets against the thirteen sailors whom I had arrested. The following morning the Deputy Commissioner and District Magistrate, Mr. St. Barb, called me, and, to my astonishment, asked me where I had been on the previous afternoon, and how it was that I had not been present to make the arrests of the sailors charged with murder! Looking at him, I asked, "Have you seen the charge sheets in connection with the case to which you refer?"

"I have," he replied, "they were brought to me this morning by Inspector B——, the arresting officer. You will be called upon to explain why you were absent from duty during a serious occurrence of this nature."

"Very good, sir, my absence requires no ex-

planation. I, myself, arrested the thirteen men in question. B—— is a liar."

"How dare you make such a statement. Inspector B—— came to me yesterday immediately following the arrest. He was quite exhausted from his terrible encounter, so much so that I had to give him two or three glasses of brandy to revive him."

At this audacious report of Inspector B—— I could not help but laugh. Turning to the Deputy Commissioner again, I said: "Inspector B—— certainly got one on me. Is it too late for me to feel a little faint after the encounter of yesterday? Brandy, please!"

With that I left the astonished Deputy Commissioner, and, going to the District Magistrate's office secured Inspector B——'s charge sheets in which he had, truly enough, shown himself as the arresting officer.

Tearing them up, I made out charge sheets in the regular manner and sent them over to the Deputy Commissioner for his signature, which explained my "absence" from this important duty.

CHAPTER XXII

EPIDEMIC OF CHOLERA—MY EXPERIENCE IN THE CHOLERA SHEDS—I GO TO SLEEP WITH DEAD CONVICTS, VICTIMS OF CHOLERA

In the month of April, 1885, Mr. Carapeet, assistant superintendent of telegraphs, who had been on a tour of inspection, was brought in from the jungles suffering from cholera. He had been attacked two days previously and had experienced much difficulty in getting a boatman to bring him down the river to Bassein. His condition was very serious when he reached Bassein.

He was placed in a gharry (cab) and driven to the central jail about noon in the hope of finding the civil surgeon, who was also superintendent of the jail. The chief jailer, Mr. Henry H. Harrison, went from the jail office to the gharry, which was outside of the jail. He was horrified to find Mr. Carapeet on the floor of the gharry in a helpless condition. He ordered the patient to be driven at once to the hospital about a hundred and fifty yards away.

I was in the District Magistrate's Court prosecuting a case for the Crown when news of poor Carapeet's condition was brought to me. I im-

mediately asked permission of the Court to allow Inspector Beal to take charge of the case in question, to which he consented. I then hastened to the hospital and remained with poor Carapeet up to the time of his death, three days later.

The civil surgeon, who was in charge of the case, did not at any time enter the ward to examine the patient. He was afraid, he said, of carrying the infection into the town, which, being interpreted, meant to his own precious carcass. It was this inhuman conduct and criminal neglect which caused me to stay with the patient to console his grief-stricken wife and children.

Cholera broke out in the jail the evening that Mr. Carapeet was brought into the hospital.

The morning that I rendered my last service to my friend, that of closing his eyes in death, I was placed in command of a detachment of police detailed to guard the two thousand prisoners removed from the jail to camp on account of the cholera epedimic.

A bamboo cholera shed about 100x20 was erected at the back of the jail which it was thought would accommodate all the cases.

This cholera shed was soon full, and another shed had to be hastily put up. The daily average number of patients for nearly three weeks was two hundred and fifty to three hundred. The medical staff consisted of the medical officer of the jail, and two hospital assistants (East Indians). The medical officer every morning and evening "visited" the cholera sheds, *i. e.*, came within hailing distance, using his hands as a megaphone, inquired

the number of patients, number of deaths, number of "admissions" and repeating his wise instructions to keep up the same treatment, whatever that might mean, took his departure without having run any risk of contagion!

Realizing that a couple of native hospital assistants, no matter how proficient or how zealous to duty, could not possibly cope with the tremendous task evolved in the routine work of admission, and death reports, diet, dispensary, and the thousand and one details of a prison hospital, and at the same time give proper attention to two or three hundred cholera cases day and night, I asked for and obtained permission to place my junior officer in command of the guard, and went into the cholera sheds to render what aid I could to the unfortunate convicts.

For a fortnight the epidemic continued unabated, and each day the death roll increased. Early in the third week the chief jailor remarked to me that "he had enough of it." The terrible strain of the last fortnight, day and night duty, had, he said, "played him out." He felt that he would himself "fall a victim to the epidemic."

Mr. Harrison was an athlete; a man of strong will, and weighed three hundred and twenty pounds or more. I endeavored to divert his mind from the melancholy subject, and laughed at his fears of falling a victim of cholera.

"Why," I said, "the idea is absurd, you have not time even to think about cholera." Leading him away from the vicinity of the cholera sheds, I accompanied him to his quarters and entertained

him for half an hour with stories and light conversation. I took the precaution to give him a glass of brandy with a few drops of spirits of camphor before leaving him to return to my duty about 11 A. M.

That evening about seven o'clock a messenger brought word to me that Mr. Harrison, the chief jailer, was down with cholera. I at once went to Harrison's quarters and took charge of his case. About 10 P. M. the civil surgeon was announced. As that celebrated physician appeared at the front door and inquired how the patient was (it was not his custom, as previously stated, to risk contagion), the patient said, "Do not let that villain come near me, he will kill me as he did poor Carapeet."

The doctor expressed his sympathy for Mr. Harrison and further remarked that he was in "good hands." For fifty-four hours I remained with my friend, leaving only at intervals to make a flying visit to the prisoners' camp and cholera shed. About 2 A. M. on the third day after Harrison's attack, I left him sleeping restfully, and went to the cholera sheds.

I passed through the first shed, administering medicine to the long rows of patients and also nourishment. I then passed into shed number two, and as I stood for a moment and looked along the ghastly rows of victims of this terrible scourge, lying on either side of the bamboo floor, so close together that in many cases the patients were touching each other and sometimes had to be moved to enable me to step between them, I

experienced for the first time, as poor Harrison had explained, that I too "had had enough of it." The constant strain of nearly three weeks' duty, night and day, spent almost entirely in the cholera sheds, without rest and with but little nourishment, with the scene of suffering and death that beggars description ever before me, was beginning to tell upon exhausted nature. I passed along the shed, attending to the patients as I had done in shed number one until I reached the middle of the shed.

There were about one hundred and fifty cases in the shed. I stepped between two patients to render them a last service. I had to move one of them slightly to enable me to step between them. Kneeling on one knee I remained for some time watching them. I began to think of the horrors of the past three weeks; of the scores of the dead that had been carried out from those sheds. I tried, while watching the two souls passing from before my gaze, to total up the whole number of the three weeks' dead. My thoughts passed to the Great Beyond, and I wondered what would be the future state of all those convicts who had died during the epidemic. I bent over to close down the eyelids of the Burman on my right, a convict no longer—death had released him. "Free—at last,"—I involuntarily exclaimed, and I could not help but feel that the future of that patient Buddhist held brighter prospects by far than that of some Christians I had known. The patient on my left breathed his last. As I leaned forward to render the same service to him as I

had to the body on my right, my reverie continued, —but in oblivion—I had fainted.

Exhausted nature had asserted itself and I was "asleep" with the dead, my head pillowed on the breast of a former convict, a corpse. In this position I was later discovered by the hospital assistant who, needless to say, was terribly alarmed. He called for assistance and carried me from the shed.

The chief jailor made rapid progress, and a few days later the inspector-general of Prisons, Surgeon General Sinclair, arrived from Rangoon with reinforcements for the Medical Department, one assistant surgeon and four hospital assistants; also a jailor to take up Mr. Harrison's duties.

News having been brought to me in the cholera sheds about eight o'clock one morning, that the Inspector General and party had arrived at the jail, I proceeded to the jail office. On my way down in front of the jail the inspector general and party were standing in front of the jail gates. When some little distance away I heard Dr. Sinclair ask the civil surgeon, as he waved his hand in my direction, "Who is that gentleman?" To which the doctor replied, "The devil, I think."

That Sinclair was in no mood to tolerate such an unprofessional and ungentlemanly remark, was shown by the manner in which he demanded an explanation.

"What do you mean, sir?" he said in no gentle tone. The doctor added, "A man who can remain three weeks in a cholera shed without food or sleep

between two corpses and still live must be the devil if he's anything."

Sinclair, giving his subordinate a withering look, came forward and extending his hand, said, "Inspector, I am most proud to meet you; and I beg to thank you in the name of Her Majesty, the Queen-Empress, for the service you have rendered the Prison Department of which I am the Inspector General. I would like to add that, if at any time you desire the transfer from the police to this department I shall be most proud to welcome you."

The words of the Inspector General touched me deeply. He did not know how his thanks in the name of the Queen-Empress affected me, and I could not help but wonder what my grandmother would think were she present to see me as I stood, physically exhausted from my long watch over her convict subjects—natives of India.

I explained to the Inspector General that I had done no more than my duty; first as a public servant; and, secondly, as a man to my brother man. In thanking him for his kind assurance of a warm welcome to the prison service, I explained that, "being a police officer I may find myself in jail soon enough, as I am of opinion that it is the place where most policemen ought to be."

CHAPTER XXIII

I AMUSE THE GENERAL'S DAUGHTERS—DETECTIVE DUTY CHASING DACOITS—A WILD DRIVE—VISIT OF THE VICEROY—RANGOON EN FÊTE ET EN GRANDE TENUE

At the close of the shipping season I was transferred to the charge of the Cantonment Division in the capital city of Rangoon. The Cantonment Division, which included the military and European section, was the most important charge in the capital. My division covered an extensive territory outside of the Cantonment lines. My headquarters faced the ornamental public gardens and was within a hundred yards of the celebrated Shwedagon Pagoda, the place of pilgrimage for Buddhists from all countries. There was a great deal of crime in the city of Rangoon, and violent crime increased from year to year; not that the people of the country were any more dishonest or more murderously disposed after the British occupation than they were previous thereto, when there were no jails, but because of the facts above stated. A petty farmer who spends one thousand dollars to cultivate a crop of rice on a few acres of land, and then is forced to hand it over to the German miller for from six hundred to eight hun-

dred dollars soon finds himself under the necessity of looking elsewhere for the support of himself and family. He is forced into crime.

The General commanding the Division of Rangoon, whose bungalow stood in the center of large well kept grounds, reported a number of thefts of plants, shrubs and flowers from his beautiful gardens. All my efforts to trap the thieves proved futile for some weeks. The General became impatient at my apparent incompetency as well as that of the whole force under my command and reported to the Inspector-General of Police, Colonel Lowndes, direct, thinking possibly that the Inspector-General might, himself, watch the General's precious shrubs.

Now there was a military guard of twelve men and two non-commissioned officers on duty at the General's house, and three sentries being on duty in the grounds from which the plants were disappearing. I had previously suggested to the General that I would station one of my men inside of the grounds to catch the thief, and that it was useless for me to place a man outside for the reason that in my opinion the thief or thieves were none other than his own sentries or members of his guard. It was this assertion, I think, which led him to report the matter to the Inspector-General. One evening when I returned to my headquarters from a raid on a Chinese illicit still, I found a message awaiting me from the Inspector-General of Police instructing me to take such measures as I might think necessary to secure the arrest of the thieves of the General's plants. I drove around to

the police station of the quarter in which the General's residence was located. I ordered a sergeant and four men to take up positions at various points in the grounds and to remain in the shade, without letting the military sentries know of their presence and to remain so concealed while on the lookout for the plant thief. I then drove into the compound up to the General's house. My high dog-cart was of a similar build to that of the General commanding the Division. As I drove into the gate in the darkness of the night I observed two beautiful young ladies, daughters of the General, at the window. Simultaneously they cried, "Papa! papa!—and, turning from the window, ran downstairs to greet their fond parent. As I pulled up near the house, they ran up to me with the exclamation, "You dear old thing, you have come home, we are so glad."

Leaping lightly from my dog-cart I stood before them—a Chinaman! Before they had recovered from their astonishment, extending a hand to each I said, "You little darlings, I am very pleased to be here."

One of them at last found her tongue, and asked, "Whatever does this mean?"

Explanations were soon forthcoming. I had been making a call on some Chinese and had dressed in costume for the occasion. Having received intimation on my return to headquarters of the renewed thefts of their beautiful plants I had lost no time in coming round, lest, perchance, the thieves might steal the two most beautiful flowers in the garden during papa's absence.

They were naturally interested in me attired as I was, and also in my recent exploit among the Chinese. I entertained the young ladies for some time with accounts of interesting adventures of a police inspector. We had been thus engaged for about twenty minutes when there was some little commotion at a point of the grounds at the back of the house.

"Whatever is the matter?" cried one of the young ladies.

"Nothing to alarm you," I said; "some of my men have, I think, caught the flower thief."

The next moment my sergeant and a couple of men came forward with one of the General's guard, carrying a few choice shrubs. I had declined the invitation of the young ladies to go up to the drawing room, as I wished to be on hand in order to be on the ground when the thief was caught, so as to avoid possible complications between the military guard and the police.

Most of the missions and mission schools and colleges are located in the Cantonment Division of Rangoon. To revise the operations of these institutions through the official field-glass of police a striking contrast is presented to the religious aspect with which the merely ordinary visitor is impressed.

My investigations and experience in various departments of service, and in the economic and social affairs of Asia, enabled me to observe the disadvantages under which the Christian missions are laboring, and at the same time to see the weak points in the policy of the various missions

operating in Asia, and the cause of the great missionary failure of which we have heard so much.

In discussing the missionary question with missionaries both at home and abroad I am forced to the conclusion that the observant official is the critic whose criticism should be accepted in the spirit in which it is given, for the purpose of eliminating such part of the field policy as is disadvantageous to missionary effort and for the introduction of measures calculated to effectively advance the kingdom of God. This subject is treated upon in a later chapter.

About the month of February, 1886, I was sent on special detective duty to Pyuntaza in the Shwegyien district, where a band of dacoits had been terrorizing the whole district for some three years. Various district superintendents of police had lost their official heads for having failed to account for this band of a hundred desperate rebels. On receipt of telegraphic communication that District Superintendent Porter, one of the most experienced and efficient officers in the service, had shot himself when asked to explain why he had failed to answer for this party, I was ordered to proceed, on half an hour's notice, to take charge of that district.

When the Inspector-General telephoned to me of Porter's suicide, instructing me to make over charge of my division and meet him at the station in half an hour's time to accompany him to Pyuntaza to take command of an expedition, in which military and police alike had failed, I laughingly told him that I thought he had a better opinion of

me. He said I did not seem to realize the honor he was conferring upon me by selecting me, the junior inspector in the department, to succeed the senior district superintendent. I assured him that I fully appreciated the honor, but as this particular command had led my predecessors to disgrace and death, it would appear on the face of it that he desired to bring my career to a speedy end. To this he replied, "No, but I wish to bring the career of that gang of rebels to a speedy end and you are the one man to do it. Can you get to the station in time to meet the train? If not, I will order a special."

"I will be there," I answered. Within two months from the time I took charge of this important post, the district was clear of the band of dacoits in question.

I attributed the failure of my predecessors to the strength of their forces. There were three companies of infantry and about two hundred police at Headquarters, the whole of which force was at their command. In addition to this force there were some three hundred or more police in the various towns and villages through the district. As the rebels had a perfect system of scouting, with representatives throughout the district gaining information of the movements of the troops, while the main body kept to the jungles, turning up in the most unexpected quarters, it was impossible for the troops to get near them. By the time the military would arrive at the scene of the last depredation in the south, word would be received of

another town being burned a hundred or more miles north.

Selecting two men, I took train to Paungdawthe, and from there rode to Bawnee, a village of about two hundred houses, where I obtained information of the rebels. Notwithstanding all the precautions I had taken to fool the dacoits, they were aware of my presence in Bawnee, and some weeks later burned that village for the purpose of intimidating the people throughout the district.

Hence, it will be seen that it was very difficult to obtain reliable information concerning the movements of the dacoits, and much more so to give evidence against them in the villages, as it would mean death to the people giving evidence against them.

I was one day called to headquarters through a special courier from the Deputy Commissioner, who sent word that the dacoits were within a few miles of headquarters, and it was said that they would attack the town that night. Poor Deputy Commissioner! He had twenty European officers and two thousand men if he needed them within call, and yet he did not feel competent to defend the town against an attack of a handful of rebels, without the assistance of myself and my two men. Sending my two men to strengthen the Bawnee station I rode into Paungdawthe, a distance of sixteen miles, through the jungle, where I arrived without incident except that my journey was obstructed by a tiger, which resented being disturbed from a nap on the jungle trail. Having no rifle, I

had to negotiate with Master Stripes for the right of way, in which I was successful.

Needless to say that on my arrival by train at my headquarters in Pyuntaza from Paungdawthe investigation showed that the alarm was occasioned by a false report. I again set out for Bawnee. On reaching a village three miles from the town I learned that a band of a hundred and fifty men had been seen about four or five hours previous on the road to Bawnee. I was about to gallop on to that place when a refugee from there arrived with the report that Bawnee had been sacked and burned and was still in flames.

I lost no time in reaching the scene of disturbance. On arriving there, I found the place deserted with the exception of about half a dozen men sitting in a bamboo shanty on the outskirts of the town, which had escaped the fire. They turned out to be villagers.

With their aid I got together some twenty villagers, which party, added to my ten policemen of the Bawnee station, who had discreetly retired to the jungles during the occupation of the town by the rebels, made quite an imposing expedition.

Having despatched a couple of couriers by different routes to headquarters with instructions to have troops rushed to different points north to intercept the rebels, I started in pursuit, and on receiving my reinforcements succeeded in breaking up the band.

About a week before I went to Pyuntaza I had received a present of a wild horse just caught in the Shan States in Upper Burma. It took two

grooms and a few assistants from 7.00 A. M. to 1.00 P. M. to bring the animal from the steamer to Police Headquarters in Cantonments, a distance of about a mile and a half. The blacksmith in shoeing the animal had to throw him and tie his legs. He had never been ridden nor had any harness on.

While I was on special dacoit duty, the Viceroy and Governor-General in India, Lord Dufferin, paid a visit to Burma. The evening previous to his arrival in Rangoon, I decided to take a vacation and run down to Rangoon to be present at the official reception. I arrived at the headquarters about half an hour before the time set for the Viceroy to land. With the exception of half a dozen policemen the place was deserted; and the only horse in my stables was the wild chestnut. There was nothing for it, therefore, but to put him in the high dog-cart, the only vehicle left, if I would reach the landing place on time. I got him harnessed and put him in the dog-cart, and started on the wildest drive of my life.

The animal bounded out of the gate of the station yard, but instead of turning to the right down the Godwin Road, as I desired, he bolted through the gate into the public gardens to the Pagoda Road, on which runs a double track steam tramway, with large shade trees on either side of the road, leaving barely room for a carriage drive. Here I was successful in turning him to the right, possibly because the steam train was coming from the opposite direction. I made record time in getting down Pagoda Road and turned into the

Strand, which was lined with troops and crowds of people. The road had been cleared for the procession. Sergeants in charge of police stations I passed *en route,* being much impressed by the pace I was traveling, telephoned to the Inspector-General at the landing place that something very serious had happened, as I had arrived in town, and was then driving at a furious rate on my way to the landing station.

My chestnut and I created quite a sensation all along the route of the procession. I arrived at the landing stage just as the Viceroy was landing at the other end. The Inspector-General of Police and other officials, instead of waiting to receive the Viceroy, had come out to ascertain the cause of my meteoric arrival. Great excitement prevailed among the thousands of guests occupying the chairs on the landing stage. As I drove up the Inspector-General, stepping forward, sung out, "What the devil has happened?" I managed to pull up about thirty yards beyond the landing stage. Jumping from my dog-cart, while a number of policemen took charge of my horse, I turned to the Inspector-General and other officials, who had followed me up, calling out, "What the devil has happened?" "Nothing; I have simply run in to pay my respects to the Viceroy." "Your respects to the Viceroy be d——d, sir. Why the devil did you alarm the town by driving at that break-neck speed?"

I suggested that he might "try my gentle beast himself" if he thought he could handle him better. I then suggested that as the Viceroy's procession

was about to start we might invite His Excellency to lead with my chestnut.

This was horse-breaking with a vengeance, and after that I could do anything with him. He would follow me about like a dog, but, strange to relate that when, some four years later, I presented my favorite to a friend, no one was ever able to manage him. He ran away many times, causing numerous accidents, and became very vicious.

CHAPTER XXIV

TRANSFERRED TO MANDALAY, I AM PLACED IN COMMAND OF THE BURMA MILITARY POLICE—AMBUSHED AND CAPTURED, I SURPRISE MY CAPTORS

I WAS transferred to Mandalay about the month of June, 1886, and assigned to duty as Senior Inspector in the City of Mandalay.

The officer of the Inspector-General of Police, Colonel Lowndes, was, like the Military Headquarters, located in the palace of the deposed King Theebaw. The police headquarters of the Mandalay District was located within the city near the palace gates. The District Superintendent of Police, Mr. Ford, being ill, the responsibility of that office fell upon me.

My tenure of office as acting District Superintendent of the Civil Police was of short duration, as I was transferred to the command of the headquarters of the Burma Military Police, stationed in the King's monasteries some three miles to the southeast of Mandalay.

The position held by my command was the most important in Mandalay, being at the extreme end of the line of troops garrisoning the frontier under the range of mountains running north and south the *Yankintoung,* and the most liable to attack.

At the extreme northern end of the line was stationed the artillery and a little further south the cavalry, and about another half-mile further south the 66th British Infantry, while adjoining their lines was stationed a regiment of Gourkas, and some six hundred yards to the south the Police Levy, and half a mile from that post, the headquarters of the Burma Military Policemen, and a few hundred yards still further to the south, an outpost furnished from my command.

The Burma Military Police was composed of officers, non-commissioned officers and men from the various regiments of the Punjab and Northwestern Provinces, the best men that could be selected from the Indian Army.

The Burma Military Police were drafted to every district throughout Upper Burma and played the most important part in the pacification of the country. The headquarters at Mandalay was kept up to the full battalion strength and drafted contingents to the interior as reinforcements arrived from India. The work entailed in thus constantly receiving and drafting troops, added to the drills and instruction of troops to raise their efficiency to meet the requirements of the changed conditions, and general military duties, was enormous.

The responsibility of this command was greater than that of any regiment in Upper Burma, and called for the appointment of a colonel with full complement of field officers, a fact to which I, on more than one occasion, called the attention of the Inspector-General of Police and the General commanding the forces. I also pointed out that I only

held the rank of inspector of police, while a number of British officers attached to my command were my superiors in rank.

In reply to these objections raised by me the Inspector-General has often assured me that I was the only man in Burma best qualified for that particular command, and that I should be promoted on the first vacancy. I was repeatedly thanked by the General commanding the forces in Burma and the Inspector-General of Police for the high efficiency of the military police and for the expeditious manner in which the efficiency of the troops was raised and transferred throughout the country, without a single mishap.

When it is understood that hardly a night passed that the sentries of the different commands along the line and the patrols were not fired upon, and, that all patrols from all parts of Mandalay, north, east, south and west, had to report at my headquarters, some idea of the difficulty of my position may be comprehended.

It was my custom to go about the country at all hours of the day or night unarmed and without escort.

One evening on my return from the palace I called in at the officers' mess of the 66th Regiment, where I remained for dinner. After dinner one of my inspectors, De la Taste, came into the mess and we remained for some time.

We were riding quietly on our way home, when we heard firing at our headquarters. Putting spurs to our horses we galloped off, expecting that we were in for a little fun. About three hundred

yards from our headquarters a small wooden bridge crossed the road. As we were going along at full speed, neck to neck, De la Taste's charger made a jump at the bridge, and the last I saw of De la Taste he was turning somersaults in the air and landed on his back clear over the bridge. I could not stop to pick him up, but on reaching my command, I sent an escort to carry him in. He was not much the worse for the experience. The firing had been occasioned by a small party of the evening having crept up to the walls and fired on some of my sentries. They made off under cover of darkness, and no trace of them could be found.

When riding back to my quarters from the 66th officers' mess one night shortly after midnight, enjoying the cool night air and in no hurry to reach my destination, I was suddenly surprised by eight armed men springing out from the darkness on either side of the road, four of them seizing my horse's head, the other four coming up on either side of my saddle. They politely informed me that they would take charge of my horse and my person. Thanking them for the courtesy I told them that I thought my horse was well able to take charge of himself, while as for me if I desired company I preferred to choose my own.

My apparent indifference to my changed situation had the desired effect. The bump of humor is very strongly developed in the Burman, and you may save your hide every time by appealing to their humor, in that you gain time by the joke.

They laughed but persisted in trying to impress upon me that neither my horse nor I had any

choice in the matter. I told them that I thought we had, and asked them to get the opinion of the horse on the subject.

This amused them a great deal, but as there was no time to lose, they said, that as they did not understand horse language, we would have to move on, and raised their dhas (swords) menacingly and prepared to lead my horse.

I was, as usual, unarmed—a hunting crop being my only weapon. I told my captors that a perfect understanding existed between me and my horse and that we both protested against their interference, and therefore requested that they would take their departure. As they failed to do this I brought my hunting crop into play about their heads, while a touch of the spur to my horse shook off the rebels like so many grasshoppers. The yells set up by the fellows rolling on the ground brought an officer and escort from the guard of the Gourka Regiment to the scene. Making known my identity as the party approached, I instructed the officer to pick up the half dozen who had fallen under the hammer of my hunting crop, and if possible to catch the two who had taken to their heels.

The officer wished to send an escort with me to my headquarters, but I declined, preferring to finish the journey as I had commenced, alone.

I have stated above that the Inspector-General, Colonel Lowndes, had promised me promotion to a rank suited to my command on the first vacancy. Unfortunately Colonel Lowndes was relieved by Mr. W. W. Daly before a vacancy occurred.

Mr. Daly came from the Northwestern Prov-

inces, and, judging from the number of half-castes he brought from the Northwest and appointed as inspectors and assistants to superintendents of police, he must have had a large acquaintance among native and Eurasian women of the Northwest Provinces.

These young half-castes were as ignorant of the duties of a police inspector as they were of the language and of the customs and manners of the people of Burma.

Colonel Lowndes, on being relieved by Daly, informed him in my presence that I was slated for the first assistant superintendentship vacant. Notwithstanding this specific instruction, Daly created half a dozen vacancies for half-caste bastards from the Punjab and took every opportunity to insult me and to make things as unpleasant as possible.

I demanded to be relieved from my military command and to be returned to the civil police, to which I belonged. To this Daly would not agree. He took the position that he had no one fitted to take my place. Having become thoroughly disgusted with his attitude toward me, I told him that he could send to the Northwest for another of his half-caste bastards to put in my place and that I intended to resign. I told him that the appointments made by him and the mess he was making of the Department generally showed that he was no more qualified for the important office of Inspector-General than was any one of his appointees. I also told him that he would be ousted from that office within a year and that he had bet-

ter keep his family at home in the Northwest, to save traveling expenses.

My straight talk to Mr. Daly was rewarded by a manifestation of vindictiveness and hatred such as I had never witnessed.

Shortly after the above scene a charge was trumped up against me which was so preposterous on the face of it that it was at once thrown out. Indeed, had there been any foundation for it every British officer, civil and military, would have been equally liable, not excepting Daly himself.

I resigned from the Police Department and took a vacation. My superior officer, Inspector-General Daly, was removed from the Department and sent back to the Northwestern Provinces within the year, as I had predicted.

CHAPTER XXV

I ENTER THE PRISON SERVICE—I SUPERSEDE MY SUPERIORS—INNOVATION IN PRISON ADMINISTRATION——A STUDY OF CRIMINOLOGY—THE PRACTICAL APPLICATION OF PHYSIOLOGICAL-PSYCHOLOGY TO ABNORMAL DATA AS FOUND IN THE INCORRIGIBLE CRIMINAL

On returning to Rangoon in 1887, I called on the Inspector-General of Prisons, Dr. Sinclair, and explained that I would be pleased to avail myself of his invitation to join the Prison Service. He said there was only one vacancy in the Department and that was for a warder in the Rangoon Central Jail. I told him the wardership was good enough for me; that I wanted to get into jail any way, and that I might as well be there as a warder as in any other capacity.

Dr. Sinclair gave me a letter to the superintendent of the jail and suggested that I should present it at once, which I did.

The superintendent, who was a stranger to me, on looking me over, said, "I am sorry, but there is no vacancy in this jail."

"But," I replied, "the Inspector-General told me that there is a vacancy. "Well," said the

superintendent, "there are many applicants for the appointment, and you are too delicate for the duties of a warder. I can not appoint you."

Thanking him for the information about my delicate constitution, I wished him "good morning."

As I left the jail I met the Inspector-General approaching in his dog-cart. He pulled up, saying, "Where are you going?" "To the nursery," I replied. "To what!—To the nursery!" he exclaimed.

"Yes," I said, "the superintendent thinks I'm too delicate to be allowed out alone."

The Inspector-General laughed and asked me to return to the office. The Inspector-General instructed the superintendent to appoint me to the vacancy. The superintendent protested declaring that I was too delicate, and that as he was responsible for the jail he had a right to select his own staff and he wanted men of muscular strength, men of vigor and energy.

Sinclair laughed at him, and said, "Do you know this gentleman? Perhaps you have heard of an Inspector of Police who arrested, single-handed, thirteen European sailors who were all armed while the inspector was unarmed. You may have heard of the cholera epidemic in the Bassein jail between two and three years ago and of an inspector of police who voluntarily served in the cholera sheds for three weeks practically without food and without rest; the man who saved Harrison's life and who did more through that epidemic than the whole medical staff put together. You may have

heard of the inspector who was sent to take the place of the district superintendent, Mr. Porter, who shot himself in Shwegien, and who went in pursuit of a hundred armed rebels, and broke up their band—the inspector of police who has been looked upon by European and natives as a "holy terror,'—a man who has no fears, and who never failed. This is the inspector to whom I refer—the man whom you say is too delicate to be trusted to the charge of convicts. I will undertake to say that if you have an outbreak in this jail among the five thousand convicts, this delicate individual will be the man to suppress it. He is appointed to the position."

Eleven months after joining the prison service I was promoted to the office of deputy jailer of Rangoon, superseding the jailers, deputy jailers of the various jails throughout the country, an honor which came as a complete surprise to me. Hitherto I had had charge of about three thousand five hundred convicts employed in the various work sheds at all manner of trades, where I was responsible for the quality of the work turned out.

I will enumerate a few of the works under my supervision. Receiving raw cotton, ginning, spinning, warping, looming and weaving into fabrics and finally converting the fabrics into clothes, was one line of industry.

I had over three hundred looms in operation all the year round. I not only made all the clothing for our family of five thousand convicts, but furnished a lot of cloth for our salesmen.

There was the saw-yard in which logs of teak

and other timber were converted into lumber of various descriptions. More than a thousand men were employed as carpenters, cabinet makers, polishers, upholsterers, coach builders, turners and wood carvers.

Every conceivable description of household furniture; dog-carts and vehicles of all kinds were manufactured. Cane and bamboo were converted into every conceivable description of rattan and bamboo furniture, baskets and bric-a-brac, mats and screens.

The husk or outer shell of the cocoanut was converted into coir and from that into cocoanut matting, door-mats, screens, rope, and a hundred and one other articles of utility.

Some two hundred men were employed in the blacksmith shop and foundry; and about two hundred in the flour mills and as many more in the oil mills. To supervise these varied manufactures and to be responsible for the quality of the work of three thousand men and the prompt fulfilment of outside orders was a Herculean task, but in addition to all this I was responsible for the discipline and the general supervision of all the convicts, and the placing of them at the various tasks.

A work of many volumes would be necessary to portray or recount in detail the many valuable and interesting features of the administration of the jails with which I was connected and the various reforms I introduced.

I can not do more than barely touch upon this important subject by relating a few incidents of my five years' service.

When I first entered the prison service I was struck with the large number of convicts wearing short fetters and cross-bar and "bad character" clothing.

One man known as "Long John" was confined in the "strong shed," and was never allowed with other convicts.

Originally sentenced to six months' vigorous imprisonment for an alleged assault, Long John, in 1887, had served eighteen years and had about eight years unexpired portion of his sentence to serve.

Long John belonged to one of the leading Burmese families. The disgrace of the imprisonment and the greater disgrace of having had his beautiful long hair cut turned this man against the British. He declared there was no ground for the offence for which he had been punished; a mere altercation between himself and another man.

Resenting the injustice of his first sentence and disgrace, he assaulted every English official who came within his reach. For these offences he had been tried and sentenced from time to time, thus adding about twenty-eight years to his original sentence of six months.

For several years no British official had gone near him, and I was cautioned against entering his place of confinement.

On the occasion of my first official visit to him, I ordered the turnkey to unlock the door of the prisoner's strongshed. This done I left my orderly outside and entered alone.

Going up to the convict I took hold of his history

ticket, which is attached to an iron ring around his neck. After observing the date of his sentence, and sections of the penal code under which he had been tried, I looked into the astonished man's eyes, saying, "You appear to have been mistaken for a wild beast; hereafter you will be looked upon and trusted as a *man*. I am going to have those short fetters and cross-bar removed, and this striped (bad character) clothing changed for ordinary clothing, then I shall send you from this cage to work in the workshops. I shall look forward to entering up your remission marks every week, and to making you a warder as soon as you have earned the marks."

Firmness tempered with kindness saved Long John, and in due time restored him to his family a respected member of society.

Cha Gyi (the great tiger) was an appropriate name for a convict who was scarred like a chess board from the crown of his head to his feet with sword wounds. The most notorious criminal and convict ever incarcerated in the Rangoon Central jail. Cha Gyi was an old offender, having served several terms of penal servitude. He was kept constantly in short fetters and cross bar (a fourteen inch triangle of three-quarter inch iron attached to ankle rings). He was flogged about once a month for a long time for offences against jail rules, and was kept where he could harm nobody.

I removed his fetters and put him in the carpenter's shop to work.

In order to create the psychological impression desired, I gave Cha Gyi an adze (the most danger-

ous weapon possible in the hands of a desperate criminal) to knock off the knots of a log, as the work for which he was best suited. I visited the work shop unarmed and unattended, turned my back to Cha Gyi's adze and in this way turned the greatest criminal into a man, who subsequently became my trusted orderly and bodyguard.

The innovation in the administration of the jail by the substitution of the application of physiological-psychology for corporal punishment, short fetters and cross-bars, resulted in better discipline, better work and a pleasanter atmosphere within the prison walls.

CHAPTER XXVI

PRISON REFORMS WHICH AFFECT THE JUDICIAL DEPARTMENT AND PUT A STOP TO WHOLESALE EXECUTIONS

FOLLOWING the close of the last Burma war a large number of Burmans who still resisted British rule, were arrested and tried under the penal code with the result that several thousand prisoners were sentenced to long terms of imprisonment and penal servitude and wholesale executions were carried out at the Central jails.

In the Rangoon Central jail the forty cells for condemned prisoners were kept occupied for many months and executions were of almost daily occurrence. It frequently happened that four men would be executed together, to be followed by four more the next morning. It was, in fact, a rare occurrence in those days that a single execution took place, the date set for the execution of two, three or four men being more frequently the same.

The executions were carried out at five o'clock under the direction of the superintendent of the jail, the chief jailer, assistant jailers and warders and the medical staff being present.

Notwithstanding the large number of executions, the system of hanging was barbarous to a degree.

The executions were carried out by a native convict and it was no uncommon thing for a condemned man to have the rope around his neck for fifteen or twenty minutes before the trap was sprung. There was no excuse for this torture.

One morning we had four men to be executed together. The condemned men were paraded at the foot of the gallows. The superintendent read the warrant of the first man in the usual manner, and asked if he had anything to say. He had not. He was then taken to the gallows, the rope was placed about his neck, his arms and legs strapped. In the meantime the superintendent was going through the formality of reading the warrants of the other prisoners who were handed over in succession to the executioner. The third and fourth men had statements to make, which were taken down. The torture of mind of numbers one and two as they stood on the gallows, pinioned, with the rope around their necks, and the cap drawn over their heads, during these formalities and statements may be better imagined than described.

When the executions were over, I turned to the superintendent, Dr. MacDonald, and said, "Doctor, this sort of thing has to stop."

He turned on me in astonishment; and well he might at the insubordinate nature of my remark.

"What the devil do you mean?" he asked.

"I mean, sir, that the first man you sent to the gallows stood there with the rope about his neck for twenty-two minutes before you gave the signal for the drop. Imagine yourself in that man's place. You would need the rope to support you."

To this explosion of just indignation the superintendent replied, "I carried out the executions as expeditiously as possible. Could you have done better?"

"I could," I replied.

"Then," said he, "there are four more men to be executed to-morrow morning. Will you, sir, superintend those executions?"

"I will," I replied.

"Very good, it is understood that you will take charge of the executions to-morrow morning," whereupon he turned on his heel and left in no pleasant mood.

The following morning the prison staff gathered to witness the executions as usual. The prisoners were brought out. The superintendent on being handed the warrants of the four condemned men looked at me and said, "Are you ready?"

"Yes, sir, I am ready," I replied.

I had myself tested the ropes and carefully adjusted the length of the drop for each of the condemned men according to height and weight.

The warrant of the first man having been read, the superintendent, turning to me, said, "Take this prisoner."

I instructed the prisoner to step forward. The superintendent therefore said, "Take this prisoner on the gallows."

"How many men are to be executed this morning?" I demanded.

"Four, sir," roared the superintendent.

"At what hour are the other three to be executed?" I asked.

"They are all to be executed together," said the superintendent.

"Very good," I replied, "When you have made over the four condemned men I will attend to my duty; you attend to yours."

"Take that man to the gallows," again thundered the superintendent.

"I am responsible for the executions," I replied, "perform your own duty, sir, and leave me to mine. If you wish this man to be executed separately I will have the execution carried out; but, if the four men are to be executed together, they will go on the gallows together."

The superintendent was furious, but proceeded with the reading of the warrants. When the four condemned men had been handed over to me, I had them escorted onto the gallows. They were pinioned and the ropes and caps adjusted by the men I had detailed for that duty, and the trap was sprung within ten seconds from the time the condemned men reached the gallows. The executions were a complete success from a humane standpoint, the neck being broken in each case.

The superintendent was very much pleased and congratulated me for my persistency in regard to the manner of conducting the executions. Needless to say the reform thus introduced was thereafter observed in the Rangoon Central prison.

For some months I had been studying ways and means to put a stop to these unjust and wholesale executions.

This was a difficult matter as, in my official capacity as the deputy jailer, I could not in any

way interfere with the judicial department or with the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court or the local government. At length an unexpected opportunity presented itself. A Burmese boy, in his sixteenth year, who had been sentenced to serve seven years of penal servitude under sections 395 and 396 of the Indian Penal Code, for dacoity and murder, appealed to the Supreme Court against the sentence.

A brief outline of this case will illustrate how many of the unfortunate men executed were victims of injustice.

The military authorities having received information that a band of rebels contemplated an attack upon a village in Upper Burma at a given time, an expedition was sent for the purpose of protecting the village.

The rebels attacked the village only a few minutes before the arrival of the troops; they were, in fact, sacking the place when the troops arrived on the scene. The villagers had abandoned their homes on the approach of the rebels and had taken to the jungle. The rebels in turn ran from the troops, who pursued them through the jungle. The villagers, frightened by the fire of the troops, ran in all directions. It was impossible to distinguish between rebels and villagers. The boy above referred to, who belonged to the village, was shot through the thigh and was the only person captured. As he was running away it was concluded that he was a rebel and was accordingly sent up for trial, convicted and sentenced as stated to serve seven years penal servitude.

The day that his appeal was brought before the

Appellate Court, the chief jailer was on duty in the evening and received the prisoners from court.

The following morning I visited the condemned cells at about six o'clock.

On entering the corridor I was astounded to see the boy in question in cell No. 1. Taking his history ticket, I noticed that the Appellate Court had confirmed the finding of the Lower Court, but had enhanced the sentence from seven years to—death!

"Why are you here," I asked in Burmese.

"*Cho hpa lo bai*" (to be hanged), replied the youth.

"You were sentenced to seven years," I said. "How is it you are now sentenced to death?"

"I was not guilty of the crime for which I was sentenced to seven years, so I appealed to the Supreme Court hoping that I would be released, but I am to be hanged instead."

"You must appeal to the Chief Commissioner," I told him.

The youth smiled sadly as he said, "I am to be hanged in three weeks' time as the result of my appeal. If I appeal to the Chief Commissioner, he would probably have me hanged at once. My counsel wants me to appeal again but my parents think I am right in wishing to live as long as I can. So if I do not appeal again I shall live three weeks longer."

"If you will appeal to the Chief Commissioner," I said, "the finding and sentence of the courts will be set aside and you will be discharged."

I could not prevail upon the boy to appeal as I advised, but I determined that that boy's life

should not be sacrificed in this manner. I told him that he should "not be hanged." I then passed on my rounds, and found that six other prisoners whose appeals had also been heard the day previously, had had their sentences enhanced from various terms of years to capital punishment. Here was a pretty state of affairs; seven men who had appealed against what were undoubtedly unjust sentences, as in the case of the boy, instead of receiving clemency were to be railroaded to the gallows.

The following morning the *Rangoon Gazette* and the *London Times* published a full account of the gross miscarriage of justice against these seven condemned prisoners. At 7.30 A. M. when in the main jail, I heard a great commotion in the office of the superintendent. A few moments later the big gates leading into the main jail swung open, and the Chief Commissioner with his staff and the superintendent of the jail, Dr. Davis, and the chief jailer appeared in sight. It was evident that something very serious had happened, for the Chief Commissioner was talking in a most excited manner. I expected to see the party turn to the left to go to the condemned cells, but they came directly up to the main jail.

Approaching the party I paid my respects to the Chief Commissioner. The superintendent of the jail, falling a little to the rear of the Chief Commissioner, said to me, sotto-voce, "Where are those men?"

"What men?" I innocently inquired.

"Ah, I forgot; you have only just joined us, the men sentenced to death I mean."

"The men sentenced to death? Why there are forty of them in the condemned cells," I said. "Which of them do you mean?" For once in my service I appeared to not comprehend. The Chief Commissioner, having heard the last remark, turned abruptly and said severely, "I want the seven men whose sentences have been enhanced from imprisonment to death."

"Very good, Your Excellency, the men are in the condemned cells; I shall be pleased to hand them over to your orders."

On discovery that he had been brought out of his way, and had to retrace his steps, he was more furious than before and I could not help thinking that the cablegram he had received from London must have called him down very severely.

Leading the way to the condemned cells I escorted the party to the cell door of the boy, and, pointing to him said, "This, Your Excellency, is the first *man,* whose sentence was enhanced from seven years to death."

The Chief Commissioner was staggered.

"This!" he ejaculated, "Why he is a mere child!"

After having asked the boy his name, age, charge, and original sentence, the Chief Commissioner said, "Sentence of death is set aside, the original sentence to stand."

The death sentence in the other six cases was set aside in the same manner, after which the party

proceeded to the office of the superintendent of the jail.

The Chief Commissioner at once took up the investigation. Some jail official, he said, had committed a breach of prison rules by giving information to the special representative of the *London Times* and to the local press. The offender must be found out and summarily dismissed from the service.

The superintendent got out of an awkward hole by shouldering the responsibility of the investigation on me. He reminded the Chief Commissioner that I was the "celebrated detective" and that I could no doubt bring the offender to justice. "Just the man," said the Chief Commissioner, and addressing me, "if you find the guilty man you shall be promoted immediately upon securing conviction against him."

"I thank you, sir, for your promise of reward," I said, "what is my promotion? I am the official who gave the information of the cases in question to the press."

Had I struck the Chief Commissioner in the face, he could not have been more surprised.

In reply to his torrent of questions as to why I had not reported the matter to him instead of going to the press, I told him that as the red tape in the judicial department had become so terribly tangled that the whole department had apparently run wild, it would have been impossible for me to unravel it to enable me to place these cases before him. My only course of action was through London. The cables were very convenient for the ad-

justment of such a miscarriage of justice at short notice. I further explained that my object in having given publicity to these cases was not merely to save the lives of the seven unfortunate men whose death sentence he had set aside, but to put a stop to the wholesale executions which had been going on for a year or more, the majority of which men were in my opinion as much the victims of injustice as the "mere child" whose death sentence had just been set aside.

The Chief Commissioner said that my audacious remarks reflecting on the courts of justice amazed him.

To this I retorted that my remarks could not amaze him more than the gross miscarriage of justice, the report of which to London had brought him there, had amazed the British public, and unless steps were taken to stop the wholesale executions, it was my intention to make a full report on the matter to Her Majesty the Queen-Empress.

The number of executions from that time materially decreased. I had gained my end at the risk of my own liberty, but I was not tried or dismissed for my offense, nor, did I get the promised promotion.

CHAPTER XXVII

AN OUTBREAK AMONG CONVICTS—WARDERS KILLED AND WOUNDED, OTHERS MAKE THEIR ESCAPE—I RUN TO THEIR ASSISTANCE AND FIND MYSELF UNARMED AND UNSUPPORTED BEFORE TWO THOUSAND ARMED CONVICTS

THE Rangoon Central Jail opened at 5.30 A. M. The convicts, numbering from four thousand to five thousand, were marched to their respective work-yards by six o'clock. About three thousand men were employed in what is termed the "round house," which is constructed on the plan of a huge wheel, the hub being the office of the assistant jailer in charge and work-shop at the same time. Shoemakers and tailors were on the ground floor on which the office was located, a store-room and lookout tower being above. The spokes were represented by twenty-one work-sheds, with from one hundred to two hundred convicts in each. About another thousand men in adjoining work-yards were engaged as sawyers, carpenters, coach-builders and blacksmiths.

At 8 A. M. the convicts were marched to the main jail for breakfast; at nine A. M. work was again started.

One morning as the last gang of convicts had

reached the round-house, and before being locked up they attacked the warders and seizing the keys, unlocked a number of the other work-sheds, and the gate leading to the adjoining work-yard.

After having killed, wounded and routed every prison official, they proceeded to the adjoining work-yard where they were reinforced by the convicts employed there and the bad characters on the treadmill, at least one thousand men more, making between two and three thousand mutineers in all.

At the time the alarm was sounded the chief jailer, Mr. Harrison, and I were in the jail office, over which the jail guard of about two hundred men is located. Hastily telling Harrison to wait and take charge of the guard and to surround the jail walls, I ran in to the round-house to take charge of the staff there.

The round-house was situated about two hundred yards from the jail office. It was an easy matter to cover the distance when once I had passed through the two main gates, but on reaching the outer gate of the work-yard, the turnkey of which was on the inside of the wall, I had some difficulty in getting the gate opened. Again, on reaching the gate of the round-house work-yard, which was also locked on the inside, it was not until a convict warder, who had not joined in the outbreak, found the bunch of keys left by the mutineers to unlock the gate, that I could gain admission. On entering this gate I stumbled over the body of a warder who had been struck down while attempting to escape. A few yards from his body

was the body of another man. The convict warder who had unlocked the gate for me, told me that the convicts had all gone to the treadmill and carpenter shop. The big gates were standing wide open, and I at once ran to the treadmill side. I found the large gates of the carpenter shop thrown wide open. Pandemonium reigned supreme through the four large sheds, constructed in the form of a square without partitions and in the courtyard in which the saw-yard was located.

There were upwards of two thousand convicts armed with legs of tables, chairs, bedsteads, bars of iron, adzes, axes and other weapons secured from the carpenter and blacksmith shops.

There was nothing between them and freedom but an open square and the jail wall which could be easily scaled with or without the aid of carpenters' benches, planks, and other articles which were plentiful in the workshops. Had the rush been made, a great number of them would undoubtedly have made good their escape before the military could have been got on the ground to support the jail guard. Instead of finding my assistant jailers and European warders and Indian staff as I had expected, there was not a free man to be seen. The only European warder left in the work-yard, whom I later discovered, was Warder Doyle, who, having been injured in the leg, had taken refuge under the large platform on which the tailors worked, in the round-house tower building.

As I entered the gate of the carpenter shop, unarmed and having not so much as a hat to protect

my head from the axes, sledge-hammers, table legs, etc., the ring leaders were calling loudly for the dash for liberty. It was an impressive sight to see this mob of excited convicts brandishing their promiscuous array of weapons in the air and every one yelling, like so many demons.

There was no time for thought. A moment's hesitation would have been fatal to John De Guelph. Standing inside of the centre of the gateway where I commanded full view of two sides of the square, I raised my right hand and in a word of command, cultivated in the army, I called for—"Silence!"

My sudden appearance on the scene took them by complete surprise, and the roar of my voice produced a magic effect. Within a few seconds not a voice was heard but my own. Calling upon one of the mutinous convict warders I ordered him to "close and lock the gates," which he did.

I roundly lectured the desperate convicts for their fool-hardiness and by way of emphasizing my remarks pointed to the locked gates and told them how impossible it was for them to escape. I then seated myself at the desk of the assistant jailer, who had disappeared from his post, and, calling for all the convict warders ordered them to get the men of their respective gangs together, and to march them back to their work.

Order had thus been restored, I had segregated the ringleaders of the outbreak, and had formed a large part of the mob into gangs, when the superintendent of the jail, Dr. Davis, and the chief jailer, Mr. Harrison, with a part of the jail guard

arrived on the scene, by way of the female part of the jail.

The superintendent was so much affected by the shock that he had to drop into a chair; as he did so he placed his revolvers on the desk at which I was seated. Taking up the revolvers I threw out the cartridges before the astonished convicts, to show them that I needed no weapons to control them.

A number of the ringleaders were subsequently sent up for trial, some were hanged for murder and others received additional sentences. A large number of those implicated in the outbreak were put to stone breaking in the round-house for punishment.

Superintendent and Leading Officials of Jail Caught Like Rats in a Trap—Their Massacre Opportunely Averted.

The day following the jail-break a council was held in the office of the round-house for the purpose of considering ways and means to better prevent jail-breaks.

The superintendent, chief jailer, myself, two assistant jailers, and four or five European warders were present at the conference. The superintendent was seated at the head of the table, and the other officials were mostly standing around the table. I was standing with my hand upon the back of the superintendent's chair with my back to the open door of the round-house tower building.

My hat was on a shelf on the opposite side of the large table, and I was, as usual, unarmed.

We had been discussing the situation about fifteen minutes, when a tremendous shout rang out from the stone shed in which many of the mutineers of the previous day were undergoing their punishment. The door of the stone shed is immediately facing the door of the tower-house and only six paces distant. The stone shed was a skeleton frame, as most of the work-sheds were. The door was supported by two hinges, which were old and none too secure.

A good blow with a sledge hammer from the inside would be sufficient to break them down. The door was secured by a bolt and padlock.

The shout—"Toung—Hta e'! Toung Hta e'! (break jail," "Thatt lik! Thatt lik! (pronounced thot, *i. e.* kill, kill) brought us to our feet.

Instantly the yell was taken up and about three hundred sledge hammers and huge granite stones were pounding against the door and the scantlings of the shed.

Turning on my heel I stepped over to the stone-shed. The hinges were already loosened. Seizing the turnkey, who had started to run away, I pulled him back and ordered him to unlock the gate. He being too excited and frightened, I seized the keys and removed the padlock, which I handed to the turnkey with the orders to close and lock the gate the moment I was inside. Shooting back the bolt, I threw open the door and, stepping inside, pressed back the leading convicts whose sledge hammers were raised over my head. The gate was

closed and locked behind me. Raising my voice so that it could be heard above the yelling and din of three hundred hammers, I ordered the convicts to "fall in, in the centre walk."

Order was instantly restored and the would-be assassins were once more conquered. After having put them through a little drill, I marched them to their respective stone boxes where work was resumed. I then walked up and down between the rows of stone boxes. Work had been resumed about ten minutes when the guard, having arrived, the superintendent and chief jailer came into the stone breaking shed under strong escort. As I saw them enter, I gave the order to their guard,—"Right about, turn!" and sent them out of the sheds. The superintendent remonstrated with me for what he was pleased to term my fool-hardiness" in rushing headlong into such danger, unarmed.

Placing my hand on the gate of the shed I raised the gate up and down, saying as I did so, "The lives of our whole party depended upon my action. Two seconds more and we would have been in the clutches of this murderous mob."

On returning to the office from the first outbreak, the ludicrousness of the part just played by me in this jail tragedy presented itself.

I had rushed to the support of my brave men only to find that such of them who had not been killed or wounded, had made their escape, thereby leaving me to face the situation alone. I could not refrain from indulging in the following impromptu lines for which I hope to be excused.

THE JAIL-BREAK.

As the prisoners were returning
From breakfast to their work,
The alarm was loudly ringing,
'Twas heard beyond the kirk.

A row! A row! What is it now?
A-chin-tha-toung hta dai
(A jail outbreak of convicts)
Take up your staff, contract your brow
And level pair by pair.

I saw they'd killed a Gemadar,
And smashed another's head,
While poor old Doyle is hidden far
Inside the tailor's shed.

I missed poor Murphy from the fun,
And feared for him the more,
But soon I learned that he had run
Slap bang right through the door.

The gallant Jersey buck has gone,
The boast of all the jail;
Was ever such a coward born,
Or cur so soon turn tail?

The row! The row! Where is it now?
"They've gone the treadmill side,"
Where, when I reached I made a vow
To stem that convict tide.

Athirst for blood and freedom,
Two thousand men or more,
Like Milton's Pandemonium,
I conquer'd by a roar.

CHAPTER XXVIII

TRANSFERRED TO BASSEIN—IN THE POWER OF ASSASSINS—I ESTABLISH SCHOOLS—I VISIT THE MALAY PENINSULA

In 1889, the former deputy jailer, having been reinstated, I was transferred to Bassein as deputy jailer.

My advent in Bassein was anything but pleasing to the jailer, Mr. Bell, who had previously run foul of some of my reform measures in the Rangoon Central, and who was one of the officials I had superseded. This gentleman's freedom of action, like his perquisites, was somewhat curtailed during my incumbency.

Both in the Rangoon and Bassein Central jails the convicts manifested a great deal of respect to me for my policy, as is shown in the fact that almost every prisoner discharged from the jail would wait sometimes all day for the opportunity to thank me for the humane reforms I had introduced and to wish me good-bye.

With the exception of one occasion I never experienced any danger from going about the jails unarmed and even without a stick, notwithstanding that I had been warned a thousand times that

I took my life in my hands every time I entered the jail without a weapon of defense.

In the central tower of the main jail at Bassein about two hundred lifers were kept at work on the second floor weaving dunnage mats. These men were too dangerous to be sent to the work-yards. The central tower was in view of the prison guard stationed over the jail offices about a hundred yards away.

The circular floor on which the lifers worked was divided in two halves; there being four doors, two at one side and two on the other, thus leaving two small passage ways at the divisions of the half-circles.

It was my general custom to visit the central tower about 9.30 A. M.

No tools whatever were necessary in their work. The bamboo shavings, about two feet in length, was the only thing used by them with which to weave their mats. The only danger to be anticipated, therefore, was by common assault by the convicts in either one or the other half-circles.

One morning about seven o'clock I had an impression that something was wrong in the central tower. I scented trouble in the air, and proceeded to investigate. Accompanied by my convict orderly I went upstairs. On reaching the passage way between the two doors, I discovered that there was good reason for my impression. As the convicts looked up and saw me, a low spontaneous murmur broke out, for which I severely reproved them. I knew there was trouble in one or the other side

of the circle. I also knew that violence was contemplated against my own person.

In describing this room I omitted to state that a circular hollow tower, about thirty feet in diameter went up through the center from the ground to the top of the building, which made two complete rooms of the outer part of the circle around the tower. There were two rows or semi-circles, of convicts; one lot sitting with their backs to the central tower, and the other lot facing them with their backs to the outer wall.

Ordering the turnkey to unlock the gate on my right, I proceeded with my inspection of the right half, the circular construction of which prevented my seeing more than a portion of it at once. There was some murmuring in front of me, and excited talk among the convicts on the left half of the building. I critically inspected the work of every man and spent an unusually long time on my rounds. At length I reached the first gate of the division of rooms. The fight was evidently in front of me. The turnkey, standing between the two gates, said, "You had better return the way you came or turn in an alarm, there is trouble in there."

Ignoring his warning I ordered him to unlock the door in front of me; I was determined to go through it. As I entered the second room a further mutinous murmur greeted me. Standing between the two rows of convicts I roundly berated them for their mutinous conduct.

I passed around more slowly than I had done in the first room and booked more men for punish-

ment. I had finally got to the middle of this part of the circle and could now see to the end of the room. The intended attack upon me must come soon, and I was looking for it. My only safety lay in giving them plenty of time—time alone would enable me to locate the ringleader, the villain to lead the murderous assault.

I had started on the last quarter of the circle. Was the danger ahead of me or in my rear? It was certainly very close, and it was greater by reason of the fact that the construction of the room made it impossible for me to see all the convicts and that I had not the room for action that the straight sheds afforded.

I gained a point at which only ten men were in front of me on my right, and eight on my left. I took one more step, when I was rewarded for the "waiting game" I had played. The second convict from me on my right shuffled forward, under the pretext of doing something to the front part of the mat which he had nearly completed. This brought him three feet from his original position and close up to the pathway by which I must pass him.

The object of his move was apparent—to throw himself upon me as I passed, to seize me by the legs and throw me backwards would be the work of a second. The rest would be easy. It subsequently transpired that I was right in my hasty conclusion. The convict had been selected to start the attack in this manner on account of his weight and strength and for the further reason that he was a past-master in the art of murder. He

weighed two hundred and seventy-eight pounds and was one of the most dangerous convicts in the country. Seeing his movement, I knew that I was then standing in the middle of would-be assassins.

In front of me, behind me, and on either side of me, desperate convicts were squatting, and only awaited the signal to set about their ghastly work of converting my head into mince-meat.

The time for action had arrived and a second's delay would have meant immediate death to me. I thoroughly understood the character and fiendish purpose of my foes. I had seen British officers mutilated and their heads and quarters suspended from different trees, and only a short time previously the jailer of the Akyab jail had been assassinated and his head chopped up with chisels.

Stepping forward to within one pace of the convict awaiting me, and fixing my eyes upon him, while, with the index finger of my right hand I pointed to his place by the wall, I said severely, "Back!" Absolute silence prevailed throughout the building. The tension of the few seconds that followed was very great. Quietly I stood, my eyes riveted on those of my giant foe, and my forefinger still pointing to the spot to which I had commanded him to move.

At last! His eyes fell before my gaze. He moved back to the wall. But still I remained. The task of subduing this monster of iniquity and his companions in crime must be thoroughly accomplished once for all. For fully five minutes I stood there and denounced him and his companions in the most scathing terms. Finally I passed on, and

on reaching the door I again turned and stood for a few minutes facing the assassins from whose power I had just escaped so providentially.

I then ordered the turnkey to open the gate and went down stairs for the purpose of securing the assistance of some other officials to search the convicts for the concealed weapons which I knew they possessed.

As I stepped from the building a second-class convict warder came running from the direction of the work-yards.

He was too exhausted to do more than fall at my feet, and put his arms about my legs and said, "Sir, sir—do not go!" He had seen me in the doorway of the central tower, and thought I was about to go up stairs on my inspection. For an hour this fellow had been running from one part of the jail to another to warn me of my danger.

Telling him to rest himself until he could speak, I sat down to await his report. When rested, he said, "Sir, do not go up to the central tower. You are to be murdered this morning on your first visit. A number of chisels have been smuggled in to the convicts in the bundles of bamboo shavings. There are more than twenty lifers in the plot. The big fellow sitting under the window on the left hand side is to lead the murderous assault."

Thanking him for his loyalty and faithfulness, I told him that I had just been round the central tower and knew that what he had told me was true, but that the murder had not come off.

I then proceeded to make arrangements for the search. At this moment I saw Mr. Bell, the jailer,

hurrying to the main jail from the office. When he reached me, I said, "You are just in time, Mr. Bell."

"Why, what is the matter?" said Bell. "Have you been attacked?"

"Why should you think I had been attacked? Are violent assaults on prison officials of daily occurrence?"

Mr. Bell was much confused, and stammered out, "I thought—perhaps—there had been an assault made on you."

"Why should you have thought so, Mr. Bell? Everything is quiet here. I am about to make a search in the central tower and would like to have you accompany me."

"For concealed weapons?" said Mr. Bell excitedly.

"Why concealed weapons, Mr. Bell? Have you ever had occasion to search for concealed weapons? Tobacco, opium and money are the things for which search is *generally* made. However, please lead the way."

With two sergeants and my convict orderly whom I armed with a baton, the party proceeded upstairs, Mr. Bell being in the lead.

It is significant that the jailer did not so much as look to the room on the right but turned at once to the door on the left and looked directly at the convict who had been detailed to lead the attack upon me.

On entering the room, I told the jailer to superintend the search of the ward and I would attend personally to the convicts.

My search of the convicts resulted in the discovery of charms sewn in their clothing. The charms were supposed to give them power over their enemy and to protect them from injury.

Twelve convicts had twelve inch spike nails, ground up like chisels, in their possession. Eighteen men were implicated in the murder plot. The convicts were taken before the superintendent and sentenced to be flogged, each man received thirty lashes, was put in short fetters and cross bars, and bad character clothing, and placed in separate confinement.

A fortnight later the superintendent, Dr. Dalziel was transferred and Mr. Bell at once recommended that the short fetters and cross bars be removed from my assailants, stating that the men had committed no offence.

Not one of the convicts implicated in the murder plot had any personal grievance against me. On the other hand I had crippled the tobacco and opium trade carried on at a good profit by certain officials. I had also caused a reduction of about fifty per cent. in the contractors' monthly bill for bamboos supplied to the jail.

For two years the superintendent had been repeatedly called upon to explain the cause of heavy expenditure for bamboos as compared with the number of dunnage mats made.

He had made many tests to see how many mats could be obtained from a given number of bamboo. The result of all tests was satisfactory, but the monthly output of mats fell fifty per cent. short of the tests.

The explanation was simple. The tests were genuine, while there was a miscalculation in the number of bamboos used each month, by which the department was paying for about double the number actually received.

On my return from leave of absence ten days prior to the attempt on my life, I was told that it had been said that I "would be carried out of the jail feet first within a fortnight" of my return to duty. I resigned from the prison service shortly after the above incident. The jailer was dismissed from the service not long after and became a printer's devil at ten dollars per month.

It was while I was in the Bassein jail that I established my first school for the benefit of the Burmese.

The Bassein Day School was opened near the Baptist Mission. This school was established for the purpose of affording a secular education without prejudice to the religious faith of the pupils. Many Buddhist parents object to the religious instruction given in mission schools, on the ground that their children readily acquire the habits of the *nominal* Christians, the prevailing weaknesses of intemperance, immorality and our vaunted "Christian Charity"—better defined as *man's inhumanity to man.* The beautiful character of the Buddhist child, the predominating feature of which is that of a Christ-like reverence and honor for their parents and elders undergoes a sad change. The parents are treated with a careless indifference, and later with gross disrespect. The boy, whose Buddhist faith teaches abstinence

from the aforesaid social evils, adopts the customs of the nominal Christian—the curse of missionary effort.

When I assumed charge of the Cantonment division, Rangoon, as inspector of police, the retiring officer in making over the charge, said, "When cases of assault or theft are reported, you will do well to go through St. ——— College. You will be surprised to learn how frequently you will find the offenders there."

The rule of the Bassein day school was to give religious instruction to those children whose parents desired it, and instruction to the Buddhists in their own faith. The late Bishop Bigandet, Roman Catholic Bishop of Burma, used to say, "Teach a Burmese boy to be a true Buddhist and you will have an ideal Christian."

The experiment of the Bassein Day School proved most satisfactory, and I determined to extend my work in that direction.

The Rev. Dr. Cronkite in charge of the Karen Mission there, which I attended, was favorably impressed with my school.

I could not, of course, do more than pay casual visits to the school, but I had a good staff of teachers in charge.

After leaving the prison service in 1891, I took a trip to the Malay Peninsula, where I spent about two months in looking over the mission field.

The mission to seamen interested me very much, and I enjoyed the services conducted on board different vessels each Sabbath, in which it was my privilege to participate.

CHAPTER XXIX

A COMEDY OF ERRORS—I AM TAKEN FOR AN EX-CONVICT —SHADOWED BY GENERAL MANAGER OF A DEPARTMENT STORE—THE BISHOP'S "COOKING BRANDY"

ON my return to Burma I decided to look into the operations of the newly established Services Co-operative Stores.

Pursuing my policy of practical investigation, I called on the general manager one morning to apply for a job.

I was directed upstairs to the office and ushered into the presence of that official, who was fresh from England.

"Have you had any experience in this line?" he inquired.

"Yes, I had some experience in this line about eighteen years ago," I answered.

"Eighteen years ago!" he said. "What have you been doing since?"

"Oh, I have been 'Jack of all trades,'" I replied.

"Where were you last?" he asked.

"In jail," I said.

"In jail! How long were you there?" he asked in astonishment.

"About five years," I replied.

"Five years in jail! I am sorry, but I have no vacancy."

"I thank you," I said, "good morning, sir."

Leaving the august presence of this simple-minded individual, I sauntered through the upper floor of the Service Co-operative Stores. I had no sooner closed the door on the manager's office than he quietly opened it again and peeped through the slight opening. When I had proceeded only a few paces he followed. Being in the humor for a little fun, I spent some time in inspecting the wares of the various departments, paying particular attention to the jewelry department and others, where the most expensive goods were displayed.

The general manager, like a faithful servant, paid close attention to his duty. He not only shadowed me himself but had an assistant accompany him.

After having spent considerable time in the store and worked up the nerves of the manager, I met the assistant manager, Mr. Charles Pascal, whom I knew very well, and who was a member of my church. He had not seen me since my return from Singapore, and emphasized his pleasure at our meeting by placing his arm around my shoulders and walking with me in this friendly way. I glanced around.to see what effect this expression of affection on the part of the assistant manager would have upon his superior.

I observed that gentleman clinging to a counter for support—so overcome was he to discover his

trusted assistant in league with a supposed ex-convict.

After having shown me around the various departments, upstairs and down, every minute of which was an hour's torture to the general manager, he escorted me to my carriage.

I was subsequently informed that the moment I had driven away, the general manager stepped up to his assistant and asked, "Do you know that man?"

"Yes, very well," replied the assistant.

"How long have you known him?"

"I have known him for many years."

"Judging from your friendly greeting I presume you have not seen him for some time?"

"Quite so," replied the assistant, "he has been away."

"For five years, I believe," suggested the manager, and then adding, "five years in jail. Do you know, sir, that you are making a bosom friend of an ex-convict? I have had the warmest half-hour of my life to see that chap safely off the premises."

If the general manager had been surprised by his mysterious applicant, he was more surprised when Pascal held his sides and roared with laughter.

Explanations followed, and a messenger was sent after me post-haste. On again meeting the general manager, I said, "Have you missed anything? You may search me; I have not taken it."

The general manager inquired why I had not explained what I was doing in jail.

I told him that I had answered his questions. Had he wished to know what I was doing in connection with the prison service I would have been pleased to have enlightened him on that subject. I was informed that I could enter upon my duties as an assistant at any time. I was ready. I had been in the Service Co-operative Stores about three weeks when I was performing the duties of three men; that of an assistant behind the counter, cashier and checker of all invoices.

One of the most interesting members of the Service Co-operative Stores was His Lordship the Bishop of ——— and his wife—"Lovey."

Shortly after entering upon my duties I put up an order for the Lord Bishop. His Lordship had made it distinctly understood that under no circumstances was the liberty of substitution to be practised upon him. I had not been informed of the Bishop's eccentricities, and not having his favorite cheese in stock, I substituted some good ripe gorgonzola for cheddar. The order was delivered before my mistake was discovered.

The manager informed me that he would leave me to "face the music" the following morning when His Lordship would be sure to come in and raise a storm.

At eight o'clock the following morning the Bishop's carriage pulled up at the door and "Mr. Gaiters" nearly turned turtle in his hurry to get out of his carriage.

Vaulting over the counter, I met him at the door. Seizing him by the hand I shook it most vigorously as I said, "Ah, my Lord, I am de-

lighted to see you. I knew you would drop in to congratulate me on the quality of our last shipment of gorgonzola. I know your taste for good things, and so cut out the mild cheddar and sent you the choice of the whole store. No, don't compliment me, let me accompany you to the manager's office, he will be delighted with your Lordship's congratulations."

Taking his Lordship by the arm we toddled off to the manager's office.

The Bishop was profuse with his compliments for the good judgment I had shown, notwithstanding that he had called for the express purpose of kicking up a row.

During Christmas week, 1891, the Bishop and "Lovey" came with their Christmas order.

I was standing near them when a certain item on their list was reached. The Bishop, observing me, nudged his wife, saying as he did so, "Skip that, Lovey, skip that."

"Why skip it?" said "Lovey," looking up innocently at her Lord Bishop.

"Umph! Don't you see?" as he glanced in my direction. "Wait, wait, put that in last."

When they were nearing the completion of their order, I again took my position by the assistant waiting on the Bishop. At length the last item was given.

Then commenced an amusing comedy.

Glancing from me to his wife his lordship "hummed" and "hawed" in a variety of keys and inflections; he scratched his head as though in an effort to rake up his memory, searched his pockets

and patted his epigastrium and forehead alternately. He put on his specs to look over the list, and examined the ceiling, bringing his handkerchief into play, he mopped his forehead and finally remarked, "I am sure we have forgotten something. What is it, Lovey?"

"I really can't think, Bishop, but I am sure we have missed something," his wife replied.

Together they went carefully over the list and "Lovey's" pencil rested for a moment on the missing item, but still neither the Bishop nor his wife could bring themselves to mention it.

After having enjoyed the Bishop's discomfort for some time, I volunteered to assist his memory. "I think I can help your Lordship," I suggested. "The item which you can not recall is, perhaps, an uncommon one at Bishop's Court, and it is not surprising that you do not recall it. I believe it is cooking brandy for the Christmas pudding."

"Well done, you are a marvel!" exclaimed the Bishop. "That is the very thing." Then turning to his wife, he continued, "Oh, Lovey, this is the gentleman who sent us that beautiful gorgonzola."

The assistant had produced three or four brands of brandy for inspection.

"I am afraid my memory is at fault again," said the Bishop; "Christmas comes but once a year and I do not quite recall the brand we had last year. I am sure it was not of these. It had a very nice flavor and I would like to have the same brand again."

The assistant had nearly exhausted our various

brands of brandy without success. "I would know it if I saw the bottle," explained the distressed Bishop. "The name of the brand is on my tongue, but I can not quite say it." Turning to the assistant I spoke to him, soto voce, whereupon he produced the familiar wire-netted bottle with the seal of Egshaws No. 1.

"That's it, that's it," cried the delighted Bishop, like a school boy. The assistant waited patiently for the order for the "cooking brandy" for the Bishop's Christmas pudding.

Again they were in a quandary.

"How much did we have last Christmas?" inquired my Lord Bishop.

"I really forget, Bishop," replied "Lovey."

"That is very awkward," said the Bishop.

Again I came to the rescue. "Shall we make it a dozen cases?" I suggested.

"Upon my word, I believe that is just what we had last Christmas," exclaimed the Bishop. "Yes, send a dozen cases, it gives the pudding a delicious flavor." After which the delighted couple took their departure.

Six months' experience in the Service Co-operative Stores gave me a good idea of the advantage of co-operative service organizations to supply food stuffs, wearing apparel and other articles and wares of domestic utility, at much lower cost than obtains in other establishments.

CHAPTER XXX

A PASSAGE OF ARMS WITH THE REBELS—I RUN RISK OF BEING CONVERTED INTO PEMICAN

I OMITTED to mention an interesting experience shortly after I had resigned my command in the military police, early in 1887.

Having joined the Public Works Department, I was placed in charge of the executive engineer's office at Toungdwingyi; (within the mountains), situated about fifteen miles east of Minbu in Upper Burma.

Peace had been declared for some time, but the natives of this locality had not yet submitted to British rule. A few days prior to my arrival at Minbu the deputy commissioner of the district, Colonel Phayre, was brutally murdered on the road over which I had to travel.

His party had been surprised by the rebels. His remains were later found by a search party. He had been decapitated and quartered, his head and quarters being found suspended from the branches of different trees—a grewsome spectacle which filled every European, military and civil, with horror.

I left Minbu with a convoy under strong military escort for Toungdwingyi. When about two

miles out from Minbu I told the officer commanding that I was going ahead.

He remonstrated with me for my foolhardiness and asked me if poor Phayre's fate was not sufficient to deter me from my recklessness. The convoy was expecting an attack, and, as I cantered ahead the officer commanding the convoy called out, "Good-bye."

I knew my position; I also knew the strength of the rebels and my relation to them, therefore I had no fear.

I had proceeded about five miles; had long lost the creaking of the bullock carts and was enjoying the stillness of nature in the jungles, disturbed only by an occasional snake, deer or bear, when I suddenly came upon two men carrying baskets of betel-nut leaves.

A few words in conversation convinced me that they were rebel scouts. I passed on and shortly afterwards came upon a party of about fifty armed men.

As they brought their arms to the "ready," I bandied them in Burmese, saying—"This is very foolish. I am not a tiger. What do you wish to shoot?"

I was smiling and looking at the leader. I have stated elsewhere that the bump of humor is largely developed in the Burmese. I repeat it that perchance some who read these remarks may profit thereby.

The leader remarked, "This is a very witty fellow," then turning to me he asked, "Are you not afraid to die?"

To this I replied, "You are Buddhists, are you not? How then, can you speak of death, when there is no death; life being but an ephemeral condition, a transitionary stage in the evolution of our spiritual being. As we are on earth for spiritual development only, so our transition hence is by merit or demerit. If I have attained merit to justify my transition I am very happy; but, if you have attained to demerit to cause my transition, I am very sorry for you."

To these remarks the leader said, "This Englishman is a Buddhist and a great teacher. We must hear him. But he is our enemy, therefore would we kill him."

Again addressing the leader, I said, "Will you please define the expression,—'enemy?'" Continuing, I said, "An enemy is an armed man or body of men who destroy their fellow man. As you observe, I have neither gun, sword, nor spear. I am, therefore, a man of peace. You, on the other hand, are armed with guns, swords and spears. Hence you are the enemies of the man of peace.

"You think you are justified in killing an Englishman simply because you take the position that England made war upon your country. Do you think that I represent the whole British army and navy combined that you would raise fifty guns to kill me? You asked me why I smile while facing your guns. I did so for the reason that I was both happy and amused. Happy at the mere prospect of the future life; and amused to see so many men trying to shoot one man. My life is perfectly safe before so many guns. If any one of your

men could shoot straight enough to kill me, it would not be necessary for fifty to try."

The above sally caused a hearty laugh among the whole party, after which I was invited to join them in their repast which had been disturbed by my approach.

I took the opportunity to impress upon my hosts the absurdity of so many unskilled marksmen attempting to attack a properly disciplined army of "professional men-killers." It took fifty of them to try to kill a man of peace; whereas, one professional man-killer could easily kill one hundred or more of them. I told them that peace had long been declared and advised them to return to their homes and families, with the assurance that the British Government would make their lives very much brighter and the country better than in the past.

The party thanked me for my advice and dispersed to their homes.

I reached my destination in safety. I was taken ill shortly after my arrival at Toungdwingyi and resigning my position I returned to Rangoon within a few weeks.

About the fall of 1891, I engaged in lecturing on and teaching the Burmese language. I had classes in the Burma Volunteers, taught officers and men in the regiments, missionaries, civil servants, and the various classes in the Methodist school.

My phonetic system in teaching this difficult langnage was highly commended by the highest authorities; Bishop Bigandet, the greatest author-

ity on the language, said that the only thing that surprised him was "that the system had not been adopted fifty years ago."

I was not allowed to remain long as a professor of Oriental languages. The director of public instruction, Mr. J. Van Someran Pope, wished me to undertake the responsibility of establishing an Anglo-vernacular school in Upper Burma.

I accordingly went to Myingyan (the country of the wild horse) and established a government school, early in 1892.

Two or three weeks after my arrival there I was taken ill with cholera, and was alone in my quarters, without medical aid through a day and night until Father Berard, a Roman Catholic priest, whom I was instructing in Burmese, came to my assistance about 3.30 A. M., the day after my attack.

He had been out all night attending to a sick person and came to me the moment he heard of my condition. The priest brought two bottles of communion wine thinking it might be useful in the absence of other remedies. He also brought me the only quilt or comforter and pillow which constituted his bed—an example of true missionary spirit and Christian charity that other missionaries would do well to follow.

On my recovery I left for Mandalay, where I established the "*Mandalay Myo Theikpan Choung-Daw-Gyi* (The Mandalay Royal Town School of Science and Art)." This was a private enterprise. I employed only European teachers and followed my former policy of affording the

children of the country the advantages of advanced Western education without prejudice to the religious faith of any.

The school became very popular and met with the support of the leading representatives of all nationalities in Mandalay.

In the month of February, 1893, the Rev. Thomas Ellis, superintendent of the St. Barnabas and St. Luke's Mission Schools (Society for the Propagation of the Gospel), urged upon me to go to Rangoon to take charge of the St. Barnabas Schools, which for twelve years had stood at the bottom of the list of all schools in the country at each successive examination. The government had decided to withdraw the government grant from the schools. A formal examination was to be held in two weeks' time for the purpose of condemning the school.

Making over charge of my school to another party, I proceeded to Rangoon and took charge of St. Barnabas School.

The day for the formal examination arrived and a new inspector fresh from Cambridge was given the unpleasant task of condemning a mission school as his first duty. The result of the examination was a surprise to him and a still greater surprise to the director of public instruction, the whole school gaining a hundred per cent. in all subjects and excellent in discipline.

Needless to say the school was not condemned. At the following annual examination, held three months later, St. Barnabas School jumped from

Univ. of
California

The Prince John as a Missionary

the bottom of the list to the first place of all schools in the country in merit and discipline.

I devoted a great deal of my time to attending to the sick, treating cases of leprosy and other diseases of remote origin. My success led to my being designated by the natives "The Great Royal Physician of the East." I also devoted considerable time to teaching and lecturing when not engaged in mission duties.

CHAPTER XXXI

I AM TAKEN DANGEROUSLY ILL—BEING URGED UPON BY MY SPIRITUAL ADVISER, I SEND A MESSAGE OF MY FORGIVENESS TO MY GRANDMOTHER THE QUEEN AND MY FATHER AND THEREBY REVEAL MY IDENTITY

THE strenuous mental and physical labor of the past year following upon the attack of cholera from the effect of which I had never fully recovered, had been depleting my vitality and I finally collapsed from heart-failure.

This attack commenced about the month of November, 1893, but I persistently refused to follow the advice of my physicians, Dr. Baker, the civil surgeon, and Dr. A. H. Ellis, a member of the S. P. G. Mission, with which I was connected, who urged me repeatedly to return to England. I insisted upon attending to my duties until the Easter vacation. I had also arranged with Mr. Moodray Pillay, a noted Hindu philanthropist, to establish a hospital in Rangoon for the treatment of the sick poor, for which purpose that gentleman had placed at my disposal one of his large school buildings. It may be stated here that Mr. Moodray Pillay had established large schools in Rangoon on the lines introduced by me, where

Hindu children could receive thorough western education without prejudice to their religious faith.

The projected hospital, I regret to say, fell through at the very time our arrangements for opening it were completed.

On returning to my residence one Saturday evening, following a very heavy day's work, I was seized with an attack of heart-failure from which I remained unconscious for several hours, Dr. Ellis, who was summoned immediately after I was stricken, doing everything possible to restore me. These attacks recurred at intervals for two months.

On the occasion of the second attack, which came a few days after the first, Dr. Ellis, fearing that I was at the point of death, called the Rev. Thomas Ellis, superintendent of our mission.

Taking advantage of a slight rally, my spiritual adviser begged of me to send a "last message" to my "people at home." Neither of my fellow laborers in the Lord's vineyard knew of my identity. They did know, however, that there was some great secret sorrow in my heart, which they had hitherto respected with brotherly silence and sympathy.

I at first declined to make any statement, but as I saw that my silence pained my friends, I consented to make what I firmly believed at that time to be my death-bed statement before God and His ministers. The statement was made to my spiritual adviser as a sacred trust.

Rev. Thomas Ellis thoughtfully suggested that

the Rev. A. H. Ellis should retire to another room, but I explained that it was important that he should be present. First, for the reason that he was a member of the mission and therefore an important witness to what I was about to say; and, secondly, for the reason that as my physician it was still more important that he should be in a position to state whether or not my mind was clear and rational at the time of making the statement. I then explained to them my identity and the particulars of my birth; and also the names and addresses of the different nurses and people with whom I had lived, giving the dates and years during which I had lived at the different places; I also showed to them marks of identification upon my body and the depression in my skull caused by the fall over the railway wall when an infant.

I also sent to my grandmother, the late Queen Victoria, and to my father, then Prince of Wales, a message of my forgiveness for the cruel manner in which I had been robbed of my legitimate birthright, as his first born son torn from my mother's breast.

I again relapsed into unconsciousness; prayers were offered and, finally, as Dr. Ellis pronounced life extinct, he uttered the words, "Into Thy hands, O God, we commend his spirit, Amen."

Thus it was thought that I had departed from this life. The two clergymen had adjourned to another room, to discuss the arrangements for my funeral the following day, Sunday.

They remained for some time conversing in an undertone. Here I must relate a manifestation

H. M. KING EDWARD VII

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

of a psychological phenomenon which may be of interest to psychologists and to the medical profession.

While my body was lying cold, in apparent death, I was conscious of being present in the room where my fellow missionary workers were seated and planning for the services on the morrow and for my funeral to take place in the afternoon. I understood the conversation as distinctly as I could have done had I been present in the body. I was also conscious of passing through other experiences, the particulars of which I will not relate at this time.

I recovered consciousness about eight hours later, and my appearance on the stage of life on Sunday morning gave my friends quite a shock.

I wrote to my father immediately after my recovery, and explained that I was about to return to England on sick furlough.

It was at this time that my father communicated with the Lieutenant Governor of Burma, admitting our relationship and suggesting that I should go to Australia or New Zealand for my health.

This communication, while of a confidential nature, had to be made known to the Lord Bishop of my diocese, the director of public instruction and other officials, with the result that within a week it was an open secret.

Being unable to live longer in seclusion, I assumed the family name of Guelph, which my grandmother resented.

Captain J. Regan, superintendent of the Government Printing Department in Burma, dropped

in on me at Evershed's Hotel one evening. After a few casual remarks he suggested that I should discontinue to use the family name of the Reigning House; he also explained to me that if I would discontinue the name of Guelph, a title commensurate with my birth would be conferred upon me and an office suited to my station would be provided for me in the colonies.

I explained to him that for over twelve years the doctors had repeatedly urged me to return to England, saying that I could not live in the climate of India; that I had as persistently refused to leave India where I had enjoyed my life of seclusion, preferring rather to die in seclusion than to return to England where the bitterness of my position was ever present with me and made life a misery. The injustice and indignities heaped upon me and my mother from the time of my birth were simply intolerable and words failed me to adequately express the contempt in which I had held my grandmother, my father and the nation at large for the parts they had played in the infamous and barbarous crime committed against me and my mother. Now that my identity had been made known through my father's communication to the authorities, and my desire to live incognito was no longer possible, the assumption of my family name was the only course left open to me. I further explained to Captain Regan that I possessed certain royal titles by right of birth, and that as my name was not Esau I was not disposed to barter my birthright for a "mess of pottage." He would please convey my compliments to Her

Majesty the Queen-Empress, my grandmother, and tell her that it was my intention to be known thereafter by the family name as the legitimate issue thereof. And, further, that I purposed to return to England as advised by my physician. I added, however, that out of respect for her feelings, I would, during her lifetime, continue the incognito hitherto observed, and would be known by the family name hyphenated with the name by which I had always been known, *i. e.*, John R. Guelph-Norman; but, that the day my father should be crowned King of Great Britain and Ireland, I would thereafter be known only by the family name of Guelph or by my rightful titles.

The Lord Bishop of my diocese complimented me on the stand I had taken, and, stating that I had "the lash in my hand," urged me "to go home and use it."

CHAPTER XXXII

I AM RECOMMENDED FOR CHAIR OF BURMESE, CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY—I SAIL FOR ENGLAND—BUFFETTED BY SOUTHWEST MONSOONS, WE REACH ENGLAND MUCH BATTERED AND CRIPPLED

I TOOK passage by the tramp steamer S. S. *Africander,* Captain C—— H———, as jolly a skipper as ever sailed the seas, for two reasons: I was going on sick furlough without pay, with an empty pocket and no bank account; had my salary in the mission been ten times greater than it was I would have been in the same impoverished condition, since a missionary agent can always find good use for surplus money. The cheap passage by the tramp was, therefore, a consideration to me. In the second place, being the only passenger I would have the advantage of quiet and rest, not easily obtained on the regular liners; moreover, the *Africander* being a slower boat I would have the advantage of the longer voyage which would benefit my health.

I had not, however, bargained for the exciting experience I was entering upon. The excitement commenced before we put to sea, by the chief officer shooting me in the right foot at two-foot range with his air gun. Congratulating myself

that he had chosen my foot instead of my head as a target for his tomfoolery, I dismissed the matter from my mind. All went well until we reached Columbo, where we coaled. The ship was overloaded on leaving Rangoon, and on steaming from Columbo about midnight we were a foot below the water line. Captain H——— had been for many years on the South African Mail Service, but was unfamiliar with the far Eastern trade routes.

His unfamiliarity with the monsoons led him to take the regular course of mail steamers in good weather instead of following the course as marked on the chart for the monsoon season.

The course followed by the captain was where the greatest force of the monsoons was concentrated and the most confused seas were encountered.

The three forward hatchways were stove in and tons of water soaked the cargo of rice, the life boats smashed into matchwood and the davits snapped up like so many slate pencils, the bulwarks and deck torn up, and the after-saloon damaged and flooded.

When off the island of Socotra about 5.30 P. M. a sea was shipped which gave the *Africander* a spasm. The chief engineer on calculating the force required to do the damage done by that sea found it to be 21,000 tons.

The chief officer was on the bridge. The helm was put hard a'port and all hands called on deck to clear away the wreckage and once more to cover the hatchways. By an error of judgment the Cap-

tain, on reaching the bridge again, turned her head to the sea, with the result that another sea was shipped, endangering the lives of the whole crew and came near sending the boat to the bottom.

The following morning about nine o'clock we were abeam the Island of Socotra, having made a "record" run of eight knots in sixteen hours steaming at full speed. It was with feelings of relief that we passed this point where two liners had been wrecked about a week previous. In sixteen days we had made a run from Columbo which, under ordinary circumstances, should have been made in six days. We arrived safely at Suez, called at Port Said, Alexandria, Beirut, Jaffa, Tripoli and other ports.

Captain H———, who was considerably alarmed for the safety of the vessel and for his own skin during the worst part of the voyage, sought my companionship a good deal of the time and we spent many hours together. The afternoon before reaching Socotra, I wished to take a nap, and, calling the steward, told him that if the captain should call for me, he was to say that "I had gone ashore."

A little later I heard the captain calling for the steward. He ordered the steward to convey his compliments to me and to say that he would like to see me. I heard the steward carry out my instructions by saying, "he's gone ashore, sir."

"Well," replied the captain, "when he comes aboard, tell him I would like to see him."

"Aye, aye, sir," replied the steward.

A few moments later I heard the captain roar for the steward; when that dignitary responded, the captain shouted, "Gone ashore, has he? ! ! Gone ashore, you lubber, and we sixteen days at sea?"

Here followed a fusilade of sea-boots and other movable articles to the accompaniment of further picturesque sea language, after which the captain made his way to my cabin.

We reached Alexandria on the anniversary of the bombardment of that port.

An affray took place that evening between a lot of Egyptians and English sailors in port.

I had gone ashore early in the afternoon and knew nothing of the trouble. About midnight when returning on board I was attacked by a dozen stalwart Egyptians, not far from the pier. Being unarmed, I "borrowed" a club from one of my assailants and gave them a lesson in the use of the weapon—and escaped without injury beyond having my coat torn. I reported the matter to the police and returned to the steamer.

On reaching Gravesend I said "good-bye" to the captain and officers and proceeded to London by train.

I reported at the office of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel on my arrival in London.

It was necessary for me to find some occupation. I had expected to have been appointed to the chair of Burmese in the Cambridge University, for which I had been recommended before leaving Burma. As I had been more than two months on

the voyage, or more than a month longer than I had expected, the position had been filled before my arrival. A number of the missionary societies in London said they would be glad of my services when they made their appointments in November, but it was difficult to find congenial employment during the summer months.

The curacy of St. John's Church, Birmingham, was offered to me from the 1st September, 1894, but as the letter was mislaid in the office of the S. P. G., I knew nothing of the offer until the middle of September when it was, of course, too late.

I had written to my grandmother, the late Queen Victoria, and also to my father two or three times during the voyage home, and had given them the name and address of my London agents in case they desired to communicate with me, but I gave my father to distinctly understand that notwithstanding that I was returning on sick furlough and physically unfit for work, I desired no financial assistance from him except my legitimate birthright. As I had been thrown upon my own resources from infancy, I would accept no compromise.

Having looked in vain for employment among all the Home Missionary Societies and being reduced to my last shilling, I took to the lecture platform; lecturing on the medical systems of India, Ayurveda and Yunani, giving at the same time demonstrations on the platform of the practical application of physiological psychology to abnormal or pathological data of both physical

and mental nature. I established consulting rooms in Liverpool and Manchester on the suggestion of my friend H. L. Squires, of Hope Street, Liverpool.

My services were much in demand, both in the lecture field and in treating disease. The sick, the lame, and the blind were brought from different parts of the country and also from the continent of Europe to me. The press notices of that time show that some people much appreciated my services.

CHAPTER XXXIII

I RETURN TO BURMA—I ESPOUSE THE CAUSE OF THE PEOPLE—MY GROWING POPULARITY A MENACE TO THOSE WHO HAD USURPED MY RIGHTS—FIFTEEN YEARS OF POLITICAL INTRIGUE AND PERSECUTION FOLLOW

At the end of April, 1895, I cancelled all my engagements and returned to India by the S. S. *Ameer* of the Brocklebank Line, sailing from Liverpool 7th May for Calcutta, from which port I took the British India line for Rangoon, where I arrived on the 15th June.

My furlough did not expire until the 24th May the following year, but it was too painful for me to remain in my false position in England living among the people, while others enjoyed my rightful patrimony.

On my arrival in Burma I established an institute for the treatment of diseases found intractable by ordinary medical treatment, such as leprosy, diseases of the eye and ear and nervous system, the neurosis and psychosis of alcoholism and mental diseases generally.

Wishing to continue my investigations, I resigned from the Anglican Church Mission and went on a tour through India, treating the sick at

the various centres *en route*. It was during this tour that I first met with political persecution, which was continued up to the time of the death of my father, in May, 1910.

At the end of 1896, I returned to Burma and established the Maulmein Sanatorium. My clientelle was principally among the poor Burmese and Hindoos. The number of people seeking relief was so great that my strength was taxed to the limit.

One morning I decided to take a rest. Accompanied by two attendants I took a row boat up the Salween river to the village of Kadoe. On reaching that place the bank of the river was lined with crowds of Burmese, many of whom, having learned that I was going there, had proceeded by the road. On leaving Kadoe on my return trip, shortly after the boat had pulled into the stream, I discovered a Burman concealed in the small compartment at the stern of the boat.

I directed him to come to me. He crawled out on hands and knees, and as he approached prostrated himself before me begging for mercy—he was a leper. He pleaded with me to treat him for his horrible disease; his appeal was not in vain.

I established a special consulting room for the treatment of the sick poor under the care of the Hindu Charitable Association.

In February, 1897, I established a Buddhist Girls' School in Thatone. This school I subsequently made over to the Buddhist Association and from this, the Empress Victoria Diamond Jubilee Buddhist Boys' School and the Empress

Victoria Diamond Jubilee Buddhist Girls' School were established by a prominent Buddhist, Mr. Houng, of Elgin House, Rangoon, who was then the assistant comptroller of Burma.

The famine in India and Burma, the epidemic of bubonic plague in Bombay, then spreading to other districts, and the political unrest in Bengal, the North Western Provinces and the Punjab, and throughout Upper Burma, demanded conciliatory action on the part of the Government to avert a bloody revolution. College students and political agitators were lecturing and spreading sedition through the leading Burmese officials, magistrates and members of the Bar were meeting in secret council with private citizens to discuss ways and means "to throw off the oppressive and tyrannical yoke of a British rule," in which, as stated in a letter addressed by me to my father in 1902, I held them to be victims of our injustice and quite blameless.

A brief outline of the effect of our short-sighted administration will suffice to justify my action in resigning from the Anglican Church Mission in Burma to espouse the cause of the people of Burma and India.

At the close of the last Burma war, 1886-7, a royal proclamation was issued in the name of the Queen-Empress of India, calling upon the people to return to their homes and to their peaceful avocations; being assured of the protection of Her Imperial Majesty's government—enjoyed by all loyal subjects throughout the Empire. Among other things, the Burmese people were assured in

the name of the Queen-Empress that they would not only be permitted to enjoy their religious rights and privileges, whether Buddhist, Hindu, Mohammedan, Zoroastrian or Christian, but that their right to worship according to their religious faith would be protected and supported by the Government.

At the time this royal proclamation was being posted throughout the country, practically the entire British and Indian army in Upper Burma was located in Buddhist monasteries from which Buddhist priests had been expelled—sometimes without an hour's notice. Buddhist temples were wantonly desecrated and their church properties confiscated.

When appointed to the command of the headquarters of the Burma military police referred to in a previous chapter, I was obliged to turn out the high priests and a large number of priests at a moment's notice from the King's monasteries to put my men in them an hour or so later. This occurred weeks after the royal proclamation had been issued. The above was only one of the hundreds of similar violations of the spirit and letter of the proclamation. The thousands of troops, and all the military police drafted by me to various stations throughout the country for months later were placed in Buddhist Monasteries in the same manner.

The jewels, gold and sacred emblems stolen from the temples amounted to many lakhs of rupees and the rapacious and sacrilegious acts of desecration by so-called Christian officials were

only equalled by the maladministration of a set of incompetent representatives of the most powerful "Christian" government on earth.

An inspection of the missionary schools and colleges of Rangoon, and reference to the old registers of students will do much to open the eyes of the Christian world. Some of these institutions have six hundred students. During the past forty years thousands of half-caste students have graduated from St. John's College alone, many of them the illegitimate offispring of British officials. The late president, the Rev. John E. Marks, D.D., who had charge of St. John's for about thirty years prior to 1896, showed me that many of the greatest names in the United Kingdom were on his registers—the sons of dukes, earls, generals and so forth, down to those of the plebeian Thomas Atkins.

As a rule scions of some of the noble houses of England thus left with their Burmese mother were allowed about ten dollars per month, and on graduating from college were put into government positions by officials, who trusted to their successors to do the same for their children in the future, in conformity with an unwritten law among Christian governors of a Christian empire. The boys, like the girls, were required to be known by a Burmese name.

The Burmese official who might have a good looking sister or daughter was slated for promotion on the presentation of the damsel to his superior "Christian" officer. But the Burmese official who would protect the honor of his sisters

or daughters not infrequently made a vacancy for some more accommodating and aspiring official.

There is probably no more moral and temperate people in the world than the Buddhists of Burma.

Where a Burmese maiden is taken to "wife" by a British official, she is faithful to the official, which is more than can be said of the official. It is no wonder, therefore, that the intemperate and immoral practices of nominal Christians greatly handicap missionary effort in Asia, for what applies to Burma, applies also to India and other parts of Asia.

When the official is transferred from Burma, he can not, of course, take his Burmese wife and children with him to Europe.

Hence some provision as above outlined has to be made.

I have stated in a previous chapter that famines in India have increased in frequency and severity since the British occupation; and have shown that the famines are due to the combination of capital and influence which have rendered ineffective the best efforts of the Government to improve the economic conditions and to ameliorate the sufferings of the people. So long as dishonest and barbarous customs of robbery and oppression by Christian merchants continue in Asia, so long will missionary effort among the peoples of Asia continue to be a failure. Moreover, the continuance of such robbery in the name of commerce, by the Christian world against the Asiatic races, must inevitably lead to the most terrible war in the history of the world.

The combined forces of the Asiatic alliance, with its nine hundred million population to draw from, will, within the next few years, enforce a change of policy, if not of government in the United States and Europe.

When I resigned from the Anglican Church Missions in Burma, my bishop, the clergy and missionaries generally were surprised. When I identified myself with the Buddhist Union, organized by the assistant commissioners of Thatone, Maung Hpe, a nephew of Mr. Houng, above referred to, their consternation knew no bounds. I was preached against in their churches under the text of "The Anti-Christ Now in Our Midst." Daily prayers were offered in the churches and schools for "strength to fight against him who has lent his aid to the heathen." That their "arms might be strengthened to fight against him who is fighting against Thee, O Lord."

This insane opposition spread rapidly and the mania was contracted by the British official. And, when I caused the organization of a Buddhist Council of Temporalities to hold in trust all Buddhist temporal properties, the primary purpose of which was to sue the Government of India for the recovery of Buddhist Church properties confiscated by the local authorities as above referred to, the dunderheads representing the Government of the Queen-Empress only saw in me a future Emperor of India. I was, according to them, preparing for a bloody revolution for no other purpose than that of self-aggrandisement.

Having the "Burma head" (softening of the

brain), they could not see that I was the only loyal British subject living up to the spirit and letter of the royal proclamation, every provision of which they had grossly violated, holding the British Government up to ridicule and bringing reproach upon British honor and Christian sentiment.

It was their unjust and unlawful oppression of the people that was responsible for the political agitation at that time, and which has been responsible for the political crimes committed from time to time. In the Addenda will be found extracts from letters addressed by me to His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General in India and to my father, the late King Edward VII, on the above subject, dated from 1897 to 1910.

My activity in the interests of my country and my people gained for me the good will and unanimous support of all India and of Asia.

My growing popularity, it was considered, would endanger the interests of those who now occupy my rightful position, as the head of the reigning dynasty of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland. Hence, the political intrigue and infamous persecution which has followed me for fifteen years.

Some time ago, when writing on this subject, I stated what I repeat here, viz., That when this political intrigue was set in motion against me, I said—"Time and rope are the two things necessary for my political enemies to hang themselves"; whereas, "time and opportunity were the only two things necessary for me to accomplish my

purpose for the emancipation of my long suffering people of India and Ireland—and for the amelioration of the condition of the people throughout the United Kingdom."

I have given my political enemies all the time they wanted, without so much as raising a dissenting voice against the unjust persecution to which I have been subjected. I claim no special credit for my forbearance, as to have taken legal steps against the injustice done me and my mother during the lifetime of my father, would have precipitated a revolution in which the country at large would have suffered.

The untimely death of my revered father has precipitated my opportunity, and the prevailing political unrest in the United Kingdom, and, more particularly in Ireland and India, the result of unhealthy economic conditions and the consequent distress and great sacrifice of life, makes it my imperative duty to enforce the introduction of measures for economic reform in the interest of the people and for the peace of the Empire.

Recognizing the vital importance of this duty to my country, owing to the far reaching effect the said reforms will have upon the empire, I now submit to the people of Great Britain, Ireland and India, and to British subjects everywhere, the following excerpt from my letter of 10th January, 1910, to my father.

My father and King having been taken from us, it is for the people of the British Empire to take the necessary action thereon. Justice to a

QUEEN VICTORIA

UNIVERSITY OF
CALIFORNIA

loyal and faithful servant of the people demands it; and justice to the people themselves demands it:

"I am about to have published in form of a biographical sketch of my life some particulars of the results of my researches and my plans for industrial development and economic reform in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and India.

* * * * * * * *

"As my efforts to introduce the said measures and to put the same in operation have been quietly, but systematically, opposed on political grounds, the public being thereby deprived of the benefits that would immediately accrue from the inauguration of said operations, I am of opinion that the matter should be referred to the people of the United Kingdom and of the Empire, that they may judge as to whether the peace and welfare of the nation should be permitted to suffer and the safety of the Empire be jeopardized through political intrigue against an individual, a loyal and faithful subject, who has given his life and sacrificed his happiness to serve his king and his people."*

To fully appreciate the injustice done to the people by the suppression of my various reforms through political intrigue and persecution against me, reference should be made to the correspondence reproduced in the Addenda.

---

*The copy of this letter will be found in the Addenda.

It was my privilege to treat one of the first cases of bubonic plague in Bombay in 1896, the daughter of a Koja merchant. My patient recovered.

See my letter of 4th February, 1897, to the Viceroy of India; also excerpt from my letter of 12th December, 1902, to my father, and my letter of 17th June, 1910, to my half-brother, George, King *de facto,* to learn where the responsibility rests for the bubonic plague epidemic in 1896 and the following decade, during which time over eight million lives were sacrificed.

Reference should also be made to the correspondence of 1906 between myself and the King, the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, Colonel A. J. Hills, and the Incorporated Medical Practitioners' Association on the subject of "The Guelph System of Treatment for Cancer," for the introduction of which I received the thanks of the King, while the professional clique suppressed the system without any investigation whatever.

Better that millions should die from cancer than that the identity of Prince John of Great Britain and Ireland should be brought so prominently before the nation as a servant of his people by the introduction of the rational system of treatment for the greatest scourge of mankind.

CHAPTER XXXIV

I SAIL FOR THE UNITED STATES TO TREAT A BLIND MILLIONAIRE BUT FALL INTO THE HANDS OF THE PHILISTINES OF NEW YORK

THE modern town of Thatone on the Salwein river is the site of the ancient city of Soovanaboome, the capital of the Burmese Kingdom.

The ruins of the walls of this ancient city still remain. The Buddha Sakyamuni, according to the zat-thas (anterior birth stories of Buddha) was the crown prince of that Kingdom in one of his anterior existences.

For more than two thousand years Thatone has been a place of pilgrimage—the Mecca of Buddhists. The first Buddhist missionaries sent to Burma by the Buddhist Council of King Asoka the Great were sent to Thatone in honor of the Prince Sidartha Sakyamuni.

In the month of March, 1897, it was my privilege to attend the annual festival in Thatone, which is attended by many thousands of Buddhists from all parts of the Buddhist world.

The High Priest, U-Thee-la (the endowed one or one who has attained wisdom), was present at the festival of that year.

U-Thee-La was reverenced as a man of God. He lived in the jungles, sleeping under the trees,

partaking of the fruits and herbs of nature. He was a friend of the wild beasts of the jungle, there being an understanding between them.

In other words, tigers, bears, elephants, and other wild beasts were on friendly terms with this holy man.

For over sixty years he had lived thus, separated from all human habitation.

While separated from the world U-Thee-La exercised great power for good; the sick sought his aid and were restored to health by his word and blessing. Those who will study the life and works of U-Thee-La will be convinced of the truth of the statement made by Jesus of Nazareth, "The things that I do shall ye do also, and greater things shall ye do."

During the festival the High Priest, U-Thee-La, camped in the jungles, according to his custom, several miles from the town. Accompanied by Moung Hpe, the assistant commissioner, Moung Hpo, a Barrister-at-law, and other representative Buddhists, I one day paid a visit to the High Priest. Much to the surprise of those present, he made obeisance to me and, addressing the assembly in Burmese referred to me according to the Buddhist custom, metaphorically, as "The door of the church—the Way."

He then described my work in England in 1894 and 1895; and described places and halls in which I had lectured, and people whom I had treated, although he had never been out of Burma. He explained the mission work in which I was then engaged and of my plans for extending the same,

but told me that my work would be left to others as I would receive a than-cho-sa (a cablegram) calling me on a journey to the West which would occupy three months. He also foretold many things that would happen to me when in the United States.

I did not see how any journey could occupy three months, and I had not the remotest idea of leaving Burma at that time.

In the month of June, 1897, I received a cablegram calling me to New York to treat the blind millionaire, the late Charles Broadway Rouse. I sailed from Rangoon on the 30th of June, 1897.

I had a commission from a certain organization to the King of Siam, who was then in London attending the Diamond Jubilee of Her late Majesty Queen Victoria. This commission detained me for some time in England; but I finally reached my destination on the 30th September, or exactly three months from the date of my departure from Burma.

Many of the things foretold by the High Priest U-Thee-La have been verified in the same manner as was the predicted change in my life from India to America.

Previous to my arrival in America I had engaged the services of a consulting physician. This gentleman, as I thought, bore a most estimable character and was, supposedly, a man of such public prominence that I considered him a great acquisition for the mission which had brought me to this country. He was an M. A., M. D., the author of many books, the pastor of "The People's

Church," president of "The Humanitarian League," and lecturer in a large medical institution which it was said employed many lecturers and physicians.

I requested my representative, Dr. M—— to engage a room for me. He placed a hall room at my disposal in his own house at the moderate rental of $10 per week. He was receiving rent from the New York Woman's Hospital, which occupied the parlor floor and basement of the house, during the improvements then being made in the hospital. He was also receiving rent for the upper floors of the house. I discovered later that in addition to paying $45.00 per month for the hall room, as a sub-tenant, I was also supposed to be the tenant of the house, being responsible for the rent of $200 per month; I further learned that the furniture of the whole house had been purchased at my expense. Investigation revealed the fact that the medical institution with which my representative was supposed to be connected had never existed, and that the other concerns, while on paper, had no standing whatever.

The bubble burst and the landlord secured the eviction of his tenants when I exposed the fraud.

Charles Broadway Rouss, the blind millionaire, sent his private secretary, a Mr. Smith, to me with the information that his substitute was at my disposal. He was a poor blind man whom Rouss had engaged at $1.00 per day, to try the treatment, with the promise of a decent funeral in case he should be killed by any of the many systems he submitted to.

The substitute informed me that he had been treated by one hundred and eighty-six quacks in eighteen months and feared he could not survive much further punishment.

I sent word to the millionaire that I wanted no dogs on which to try poisons. If *he* wished me to treat *him* I would do so, and would do what I could for his substitute after I had commenced on his own case.

Reference to the newspaper files of 11th to 15th of October, 1897, will show that the New York Press devoted much space to this noted case, and within a week from the time that I took charge of Broadway Rouss's case had an examination made by their own representatives, who reported that "a wonder had already been worked," as when the sight was tested Rouss could see and describe small objects between one and two feet from his eyes.

The improvement continued and within three weeks Rouss could describe small objects between three and four feet away.

Discovering later that the millionaire had given wide publicity to his case by the offer of one million dollars to any one who could restore his sight for the purpose of making a few million dollars, and as his private secretary informed me that Rouss had no intention whatever of paying a million dollars, as he had not thought it possible to benefit from any treatment, I threw the case up.

The wide publicity given to this case brought the millionaire thousands of letters from the blind and people with failing sight from all parts of the

world. It was said that his mail from such people exceeded half a ton in one day. It was explained to me that a certain Chicago millionaire had agreed to pay one million dollars in advance for treatment on receipt of a letter from my patient confirming the newspaper reports of the improvement in his case. This letter my patient was prepared to write on my entering into partnership with him on a 50 per cent. basis, which I refused to do on the ground that as my patient had previously stated that he did not believe it possible to benefit in any way from my treatment he was still prepared to recommend my treatment for the purpose of gaining a large sum of money.

As his sight had actually been improved to some extent at that time he could, of course, have truthfully recommended my treatment, but this fact did not alter the lack of principle in the motive by which he was actuated in the first instance.

Broadway Rouss had agreed to pay me ten thousand dollars on the least improvement of his sight, and the balance of the contingent fee of one million dollars when he could see well enough to walk about without aid. The improvement was made, but I did not receive one penny from my patient. I had come to this country from further India at my own expense, more in the interest of science than for any pecuniary benefit to myself, but had not counted upon the philistines into whose hands I had fallen.

CHAPTER XXXV

TRAVELS IN THE INTEREST OF SCIENCE—I GO TO CALIFORNIA—IN THE EARTHQUAKE OF SAN FRANCISCO —I RETURN TO ENGLAND—CANCER RESEARCH —I RECEIVE THE THANKS OF MY FATHER, KING EDWARD VII

I SAILED for Germany in April, 1898, and crossed over to London a few weeks later, where I had the pleasure of again meeting the Countess Constance Wachmeister, who had previously gone to New York for the purpose of consulting me about her eyes. As she wished to continue the treatment she followed me to Europe and remained under my care in Paris for about three months.

I had gone to Europe for the purpose of taking a little rest. My hopes in this matter were very soon shattered. Within twenty-four hours of my arrival in Paris I was a very busy man, having a clientele which included a number of the royalty and nobility of Europe and Asia, this number being daily increased by patients from all parts of Europe.

The Season of 1898 in Paris was somewhat extended by some of the fair patients, whose improvement justified a few weeks longer stay in the French Capital.

After a short tour through Europe I spent the summer at Tunbridge Wells. The winter of that year I spent in London and returned to the United States in the month of March, 1899, when I proceeded to California. I had intended to have returned to the Orient, but seeing the possibilities of the Golden West to secure the necessary capital to inaugurate my various plans for economic reform and medical institutions I remained in San Francisco and went into the mining business.

In December, 1899, I entered into partnership with the celebrated cancer specialist, the late Rev. George W. Carpender, M.D., the founder of the rational medical treatment for cancer. We established the International Polyclinic, with which was incorporated the Institute of Ayurveda. Dr. Carpender had been a specialist in the treatment of cancer for forty years, and for many years enjoyed an extensive practice in Chicago, patients being sent to him from all parts of the country as well as from Europe.

Our association in practice was mutually beneficial in that, while Dr. Carpender's system was for the treatment of external cancer, my own system of treatment was by internal medication and external application, the basis of which systems I acquired during my investigation of Ayurveda, the ancient medical system of India. The value of these systems of treatment was demonstrated by successful clinical results covering a period of many years.

The combined systems of Dr. Carpender and my own were subsequently submitted to the Im-

perial Cancer Research Fund in 1906, under the style of "The Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer."

The subject was also brought to the notice of His late Majesty King Edward VII, the Founder and Patron of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund.

His Majesty thanked me, officially, for having introduced the Guelph Systems; he also commanded that the same be submitted to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund.

I was advised by physicians in London previous to the submission of these systems by myself and His Majesty the King to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, that in the event of my submitting the same they would be suppressed. In the interest of suffering humanity and the saving of life, the correspondence on the subject of the Guelph Cancer Cures is reproduced in the Addenda. It will be observed that the subject was suppressed without even being brought to the notice of the General Council, thereby reducing the largest and most important public body engaged in cancer research throughout the world to the ridiculous position of a *one-man* institution. Notwithstanding that the late King Edward was the Founder and Patron of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, the Prince of Wales the President of the organization, and many noblemen and others, members of the General Council, and that the institution is supported by millions of dollars generously contributed by the public, the *one man*, Dr. Bashford, did not hesitate to assume personal

responsibility in suppressing the Guelph Systems without having made the slightest investigation thereof.

The annual reports of Dr. Bashford in 1906 and 1907, stated that all alleged cures brought before the Imperial Cancer Research Fund had been "submitted to impartial tests and that no curative value could be attached to any of them." In view of the fact that the Guelph Systems had been submitted in the regular manner with the request that the same be submitted to "impartial tests" in the treatment of cancer, the reports quoted were obviously misleading and incorrect.

The public was further informed that our present knowledge of cancer did not "even justify the hope of a new cure"; and the public was further cautioned against making any attempt to save the lives of any of the hundreds of thousands of victims of cancer by any system of treatment that is not endorsed by that *one-man* institution. Thus it is that the credulity of the public is played upon, and the victims of one of the greatest scourges of the earth are left to suffer and die through prejudice and bias against the discoverer and founder of a cure for no other reason than that, having been robbed of his birthright as the eldest legitimate son of the King, it was not desired that honor should be done him lest the people should discover the true facts concerning his legitimate rights as the first Prince of the Reigning House and demand that he be given his lawful hereditary right.

Great Britain was always *just and firm* in a

righteous cause and to know the truth would be to act with the people. Thus my half-brother, George, could not afford to have me become too widely known and his flunkey in office, naturally, stood by him.

But I ask the British public of to-day, Shall this infamous condition of things go on? Will you permit the work and research of years in the cause of the saving of life to be thus cast aside? Will you see fair play in this fight for the welfare and lives of my people, and that I receive just treatment and a *fair hearing* of and concerning my rights as the heir-at-law of my father, the late King Edward VII? I have unimpeachable evidence to show and the people have a right to see and hear me; Parliament should investigate my case without prejudice or bias, such as was shown in the disposition of the case of George IV and Mrs. Fitzherbert, which case was suppressed by infamous lies to the lasting shame and dishonor of the British Parliament and to the British nation.

It should also be stated that in consequence of my having received the information above referred to, to the effect that my system for the treatment of cancer and other diseases would be suppressed by the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, I also submitted particulars of the said systems to the Incorporated Medical Practitioners' Association in London through the official solicitor of that organization, Colonel Arthur J. Hills of Messrs. Burgess, Cosens & Co. Reference to the correspondence between myself, Colonel Hills and the secretary of the Incorporated Medical

Practitioners' Association, reproduced in the Addenda, speaks for itself. As stated therein it is my purpose to establish medical institutions in England as and when my financial circumstances admit, and to challenge the organizations above referred to, by the treatment of cancer, consumption, and other forms of tuberculosis in the proposed institutions.

It was for the above purpose that I have interested myself in my late mining and other business.

Practical demonstration of the value of said systems is the most convincing method by which to command both professional and public recognition and to silence my traducers.

In the year 1902, having acquired valuable mining interests in California by which I thought it possible to not only establish a large medical institution, but also to introduce my proposed industrial development in India, I addressed a paper on the latter subject to my father and further communications to him, and, also to the India office and to the press in India, in 1903.

A limited liability company was organized for the purpose of carrying out this commercial enterprise, extracts from the prospectus of which company, as well as from correspondence on the subject, will be found in the Addenda.

The development of this enterprise was delayed through political intrigue and interference of interested parties. The plan had received the most enthusiastic and unanimous support of the press and authorities throughout India.

In the month of March, 1906, I had acquired the rights of an improved and valuable system for generating power from the current of streams; a system which had been favorably reported upon by a London engineer who had been engaged in the construction of the Egyptian barrages, as the best suited for the Nile and for the canal systems of irrigation in India.

I had already arranged to proceed to London in accordance with the terms of my agreement with the Current Power Company in the month of April, when all models, current motors, pumps and other machinery were destroyed by the conflagration following the earthquake of San Francisco on the 18th of April, 1906.

My departure for London was delayed until the month of July in consequence of the heavy losses sustained through that catastrophe.

The experience of the San Francisco earthquake and fire of 1906, in which many lives were lost, about 300,000 people rendered homeless by the destruction of the city, and causing a loss of $600,000,000 in property, was one never to be forgotten.

Having volunteered my services to the Health Department and to the General Relief Committees, my duties took me to various parts of the city during and after the conflagration and afforded me opportunities to observe the efficient work of both the military and civil authorities under the most trying circumstances.

The expedition with which so large a body of homeless people were formed into various camps and amply provided for, was most commendable

to the officers of the Local and Federal Government, and, also to citizens of the United States who responded so promptly to the urgent need of that afflicted city.

One of the most noteworthy instances of thoughtful and noble generosity was that of Mr. William Randolph Hearst's Emergency Maternity Home.

When it is realized that about 182 women were delivered on the streets of San Francisco, many of them prematurely as a result of shock, within a few hours after the earthquake, the importance of this institution is apparent.

Mr. W. R. Hearst not only converted his Oakland residence into a Maternity Home, but also had other buildings constructed for the same purpose. He also sent in train-loads of provisions, dress materials of all descriptions, and sewing machines. In addition to the vast sums of money expended in various directions, that gentleman also set aside the sum of $100 for each and every infant born in his Maternity Home. In this manner the best medical attention and care was afforded to over 1,200 mothers and infants who, under the terrible conditions prevailing at that time, would otherwise, no doubt, have suffered severely or perished.

The records of the institution show that not a mother or a child was lost.

The Nursing Sisters of San Francisco were also worthy of the highest praise for their heroic and untiring service at the fire lines, in caring for the injured firemen and other fire-fighters, sometimes

carrying them a distance of several hundred yards to safety between columns of fire and over burning debris. Many society ladies also joined in this heroic work of rescue at great personal inconvenience and danger, conveying the injured in their motor-cars and other vehicles to the hospitals and other places of safety.

The mementos of this catastrophe which I prize very highly are the following letters of thanks from the General Relief Committee for services I was able to render the city, of which I had so long been a guest, and my Pass through the lines.

Headquarters of

BERKELEY RELIEF COMMITTEE

Mason McDuffie Office, Center St. and Shattuck Ave.
Berkeley, Cal., April 28th, 1910.

Executive Staff:

The Mayor, Mr. T. R. Rickard, Inter. Municipal Dept.
Commissary, Prof. E. E. Brown.
Finance, Mr. F. M. Wilson.
Distribution of Refugees, Duncan McDuffie.
Chinese and Japanese, Prof. J. H. Fryer.
Health and Sanitation, Dr. G. F. Reinhardt.
Clothing, tenting, etc., Rev. J. H. Lathrope.
Housing and Camps, Victor Robertson.

My Dear Doctor:

On behalf of the Berkeley Board of Health, I want to extend to you our most hearty thanks for the service which you have done us in this trying time. Personally, it has been most gratifying to

have the work, which you undertook, so well carried out.

The Relief Committee wishes me to express its appreciation of the service which you have rendered.

It is to be hoped in our lifetime it will not be necessary for us to contribute our assistance in so great a calamity.

Sincerely yours,

(Signed) G. F. REINHARDT.

J. G. NORMAN,
Berkeley, Cal.

To the Civil and Military Authorities:

Pass Dr. John Guelph-Norman through all lines within your jurisdiction.

(Signed) DR. R. BINE.

Chief Ass't Sanitary Officer in Charge Golf Links and Richmond District

CHAPTER XXXVI

BUSINESS IN NEW YORK—I FOUND THE "AMERICAN STATIST"—INTEREST MYSELF IN AMERICAN POLITICS—A LADY OF WORTH—THE AMERICAN LEGISLATIVE UNION—PUBLIC HEALTH SOCIETY TO RAISE THE STANDARD OF THE PUBLIC HEALTH

In December, 1909, I came to New York, in the interest of the Current Power Company of Tacoma, Washington, with which I had been associated since March, 1903, and also in the interest of large irrigation and colonization projects on the Pacific Coast in which I had interested Mr. E. H. Harriman and others.

In the early part of 1909 I established *The American Statist,* a journal of international finance, industrial development and commercial expansion.

From one of my editorials in the first number, the following is quoted:

"In the creation of *The American Statist,** designed to be, like our London contemporary, *The Statist,* a conservative and authoritative interna-

*The American Statist, July 17, 1909.

tional financial journal, the aim and purpose of the founder and management is to publish in the interest of the financial world a reliable statistical, critical and analytical review. . . . *The American Statist* is conducted under conservative management, the bulwark of our British house; and progressive policy, the secret of American financial success.

"Commercial expansion on legitimate lines of healthful competition and the sealing of friendly relations between all nations by creating and maintaining friendly and equitable commercial relations between all centers of Occidental and Oriental civilization is the *only* means whereby international peace can be permanently established.

"Monopoly is the bloody historian of the world's history of war, slavery, famine and pestilence, the plunderer and wholesale assassin in the name of commerce, civilization and Christianity."

With a view to advancing my policy for the establishment of international peace on the lines of equity and justice in our domestic and foreign commerce, as outlined in the foregoing quotation from my article in *The American Statist,* and, realizing that the maintenance of national peace is of paramount importance, and the only foundation upon which we can hope to construct international peace, I prevailed upon an American organization to establish *The American Legislative Union.*

The object of the organization as introduced by me was as follows:

AMERICAN LEGISLATIVE UNION

(A Political Censor for Constitutional Government.)

The American Legislative Union is a national nominative and elective organization for the perpetuation of the national legislature consistent with the Constitution of the United States of America and of the national motto, "In God We Trust," and, to that end:

1. To conduct a continuous political campaign to secure the nomination and election of candidates for State and National Legislatures who possess qualifications calculated to serve the best interests of the nation by faithful adherence to the spirit and letter of the Constitution, irrespective of the political party or parties to which the candidates may belong.

2. To secure the enactment of legislative measures to provide for the proper conduct of any and all matters most favorable to the advancement of national prosperity and permanent good of the people.

Mrs. Alma Webster Powell, one of the most brilliant and public-spirited, and also one of the most beautiful ladies in New York, a graduate in Law, Music, and other subjects of the Columbia University, very kindly accepted the presidency of the American Legislative Union. Her efficiency as an executive officer is practically demonstrated by the great success which attended the work of the organization during the season of 1909-1910.

Mrs. Alma Webster Powell further compli-

mented me by carrying out my plans for the establishment of a Public Health Society, on the lines adopted for my international campaign in the interest of the public health, as quoted below. It was decided that the local organization under Mrs. Alma Webster Powell should be incorporated under the name of the *Public Good Society.*

The Society, the headquarters of which are at the home of Mrs. Alma Webster Powell, on President street, Brooklyn, New York, had a most successful season in 1909-1910.

It has now a membership of over one thousand of the most influential ladies and gentlemen of New York, and did much good among the sick poor.

The great success which attends Mrs. Powell's public work must be attributed to her accomplishments both as a prima donna of unusual brilliancy and as a public speaker, and also to her personal charm and beauty and wonderful vivacity.

The international work of the *Public Health Socity,* of which the American organization is the offspring, is conducted separately from that of the American corporation.

PUBLIC HEALTH SOCIETY.

(Founded by Prince John De Guelph.)
Brooklyn, New York.

A nation in arms fighting for existence is irresistible. Tuberculosis and cancer claim over fifty million victims in each decade. The national foe demands national resistance.

Our Demand for Legislative Measures in the Interest of the Public Health.

Recognizing that the most important duty of the Legislature is to raise the standard of the public health, and, that the Legislature, in order to successfully perform this national duty, should have the support of the public; and, further, that organized coöperation of public bodies is the most effective means of supporting the Government, the Public Health Society is established for the purpose of promoting the public health as an auxiliary to State and National Legislatures, the Public Health Department and other institutions, and to that end:

I. To secure the introduction of legislative measures to provide for the promotion of the public health and the prevention of disease, more particularly for the prevention and treatment of tuberculosis and cancer; and, for the proper conduct of any and all matters most favorable to the advancement of national prosperity and permanent good of the people.

First bills to be introduced to State and National Legislatures are as follows:

1. Bills to provide for the introduction of educational and clinical measures for the prevention and treatment of tuberculosis and cancer.

Educational measures in the public schools for the instruction in hygiene, sanitary science, toxicology and allied subjects.

For the establishment of lecture bureaus and classes for instruction to residents of the tene-

ment districts, factory workers and to the general public.

For the appointment of health and sanitary commissions to enforce legislative measures for the prevention of tuberculosis and for the promotion and maintenance of the public health.

For the establishment of municipal and State sanatoriums for the proper care and treatment of all classes suffering from tuberculosis or cancer.

2. Bills to provide for the introduction of measures for the rational solution of the liquor problem.

3. *Medical Jurisprudence.* Bills to provide for the more general recognition of medical jurisprudence in the Legislature; to provide for the elucidation of judicial questions by the practical application of forensic medicine and institutional treatment, in conformity with physiological and humane principles, in the adjudication of cases in which a breach of the peace or infringement of the law may be caused by, or attributed to a manifestation of abnormal or pathological data of a psycho-physical nature in accused persons, as in the habitual drunkard, technically chronic alcoholic mania, the neurosis and psychoses of alcoholism and other narcomanias, and as provided for in the "Inebriates Act" of Great Britain providing for institutional treatment of chronic alcoholic subjects, in the place of the old "penal act" which, the Home Secretary declared, had "utterly failed in its purpose."

II. To establish and maintain separate bureaus

for the systematic development of the various objects of the Public Health Society.

Propaganda.—Recognizing the great responsibility of the physician as a moral teacher, physicians will be appointed as lecturers by the Public Health Society in every town and city at home and abroad.

Lectures.—Territorial lecture circuits will be established and regular public lectures arranged for in all towns of importance.

High class musical programmes will be arranged in order to make the work both instructive and entertaining and for general social improvement.

Classes.—Classes will be organized and conducted under the auspices of the Public Health Society for the purpose of imparting instruction to mothers in the care of themselves and children, domestic science, social hygiene, and all matters treating on the preservation of health.

Classes for young women to be conducted by physicians, nurses and others.

Classes for young men will also be conducted by physicians and others authorized thereto.

The propaganda will embrace measures for the prevention of tuberculosis and cancer and other diseases of remote origin.

III. Measures for the prevention of alcoholism and for the amelioration of other degenerating conditions resulting from abnormal sociological influences.

Psycho-Physical Laboratory.—This department is established for the purpose of promoting the

practical application of physiological psychology to abnormal or pathological data in the insane, criminals, inebriates, and in defective classes generally, in asylums for the insane, prisons, hospitals and other institutions, and in social communities.

Sanatoria.—To establish and maintain sanatoria at various centers for the treatment of persons of all classes suffering from tuberculosis or cancer and for the treatment of all diseases known to be pre-disposing causes of tuberculosis and cancer.

To establish one or more tent cities in California, Colorado and in other places where the climatic conditions are most favorable to the recovery of patients suffering from the diseases specified.

The work of the Sanatoria to be made self-supporting. Profits accruing from the medical department, donations, endowments and bequests, to be devoted to the treatment and relief of the sick poor and for the extension of propaganda at home and abroad.

The sick poor will not be placed in the humiliating position of charity cases, but will receive the benefit of medical treatment and such financial and material aid as may be necessary to their recovery and to assist them to help themselves. The cost of treatment and advances that may be made to those in temporary need may be refunded by them at their convenience, with the exception of extreme cases that may require permanent aid.

Literary Department.—This department will

compile for publication authoritative data on the subjects treated upon by the Society from the results of researches in various countries, from the clinical experience of medical officers of the Public Health Society, from the records of public institutions and other authorities.

The official organ and other literature of the Public Health Society will constitute a most valuable feature of the propaganda for the alleviation of suffering, the saving of life, and the improvement of the race.

They who would be free from tuberculosis must themselves strike the blow.

Your coöperation is invited in this national campaign against the national foe.

CHAPTER XXXVII

CONCLUSION

In closing this narrative of the history of my birth and of my life's work and research in the interest of the Empire and for the good of humanity, I beg to tender my thanks to my many faithful friends and loyal supporters throughout the Empire and also to the Press and to the people of the United States for the many courtesies extended to me during the twelve years of my residence in this country, and, more particularly, for the many letters of condolence and expression of sentiments of sympathy, friendship and loyalty received by me from all parts of the Empire and of the United States.

I am especially indebted to the *New York American, The New York Tribune, The New York Times, The New York Herald, The New York Journal, The New York World, The Brooklyn Eagle, The Boston American, The San Francisco Examiner, The Los Angeles Examiner, The New York Staats Zeitung* and other papers. First, for the great courtesy extended to me by the first three papers above mentioned, at the time of the serious illness and death of my father, the late King Edward VII, by having had transmitted to

me by telephone, each successive bulletin reporting my father's condition immediately upon the receipt of the same over their private wires from London.

Secondly, for the courtesy extended to me by all the above mentioned papers and the Press throughout the United States for the favorable mention of the various political messages and documents forwarded by me to the British Parliament, the Prime Minister, and to my half-brother, George, and also for their plain statement of my case through their columns whereby my rightful position as the eldest legitimate son of the late King Edward and the first Princess Consort has been made known throughout the civilized world.

The importance and value of the services rendered to me by the Press in telephoning the bulletins to me as the same were received will be better understood from the fact that it was due to that courtesy that I was enabled to send my last message by cable through George and the Prime Minister in time to reach Buckingham Palace some hours previous to my father's death.

I have stated in an earlier part of these Memoirs that my sensitive nature has suffered much through the secret sorrow of my life which I have been obliged to bear in silence. This suffering has increased as years have passed by, and my every effort to demand that due honor be paid to my mother by the nation was quietly but systematically opposed and the knowledge that she, the legal wife and rightful Queen of England, was

growing prematurely old under the burden of a broken heart, through the political intrigue instigated by those whose representatives have dogged my steps through Europe, Asia, and America, and also that through the same political intrigue my every effort to give to my country the results of my life's work have been likewise secretly suppressed, notwithstanding the recognition and support accorded to me by my father.

But all the secret sorrow and suffering of my life, too great to be expressed in words, was as nothing to be compared to the torture and agony of mind when I realized that, notwithstanding all my personal efforts, all my prayers, and all entreaties to my father, the last of which under date of April 10th, 1910, will be found in the Addenda, my father was not only passing from this life without paying proper honor to his first and lawful wife, my mother, but that he was passing away while I, separated from him by thousands of miles, was unable to see him during his last days on earth to demand justice for my mother, myself and the nation.

I had foreseen the approaching dissolution of my father and called his attention thereto in my cablegram of November 9th, 1909, in my usual birthday greeting, which was as follows:

"My filial affection deepens as each anniversary brings us nearer to God."

Realizing during the present year the shortness of time that my father had to live, I wrote:

"Should it not be the will of God that we should be so blessed on earth (that we may enjoy in our

maturer years the affection and companionship of father and son, of son and father, that personal affection and companionship so long denied to us by the intervention of a cruel fate), we *know* that in a few short years at most we will meet with those of our race who have gone before, where we will stand, equal before the King of Kings—*father and son and mother!* No more will a false and unholy custom permit of our separation as in this so-called Christian world."

As in the last years of his life and during his fatal illness, so, too, in death, I was unable to be present to pay the last honors of a son to father. Separated by the broad expanse of the Atlantic Ocean, my only consolation was in attending the funeral service held at St. Paul's Church in New York City.

Was the discarded wife, the rightful Queen of England—my mother—permitted to view the remains of her husband—my father, the King, who, moved by a false sense of duty to the nation and the coercion of his mother, had discarded both wife and child?

It is for me to discover and reveal to the civilized world the identity of the "mysterious, veiled lady in black," who, I am reliably informed, presented herself at Buckingham Palace, attired in deepest mourning and bowed with grief, and requested that she might be permitted to view the remains of the King.

Upon her request being refused and being or-

dered from the Palace, it is said that she demanded and obtained an audience with the Dowager Queen Alexandra, and that upon her revealing her identity she was received with deference and permitted to remain alone with *her dead.*

It has been intimated to me that the lady in question was none other than the first Princess Consort, my mother.

If the publication of my Memoirs will lead to the adoption of the reforms to which I have referred for the improvement of the condition of the people of Ireland and India in particular, and of the British Empire and of the world in general, my personal sacrifice of all that life holds dear—home, and the birthright of every creature, the love, care, and protection of father and mother, will not have been in vain. Half a century wandering over the face of the earth in search of knowledge has been patiently and silently pursued by me in the hope that my Heavenly Father, the King of Kings, would, in due time, defend the right and establish justice in the interest of my people and for the peace of the world.

DIEU ET MON DROIT.

MAY GOD DEFEND THE RIGHT.

ADDENDA

ADDENDA

The following copies of correspondence and photographic reproduction of telegrams and letters between the Prince John and his father, the late King Edward VII; with his half-brother, the de facto King George, and Premier Asquith, and other Members of the Houses of Lords and Commons, prior to and following King Edward's death; and with the various Departments of Government Service covering a period of many years afford, even to the person of ordinary intelligence, conclusive evidence of the legal and official recognition and protection accorded to Prince John by his father, the King, as the direct legitimate issue of the House of Guelph.

The fact that since 1893-4, when the identity of Prince John was first officially recognized by his father, his relationship as the eldest legitimate son of King Edward has been universally known through the wide publicity given to the same, and is in itself prima facia evidence that it was the will and pleasure of the late King that Prince John should be honored as his legitimate son and heir-at-law.

If further evidence be wanted it is to be found in the Command issued by His late Majesty under date of 17th November, 1902, for official recognition of the Author of these Memoirs as a GUELPH.

Form H

WESTERN UNION **Cable Message** WESTERN UNION

THE WESTERN UNION TELEGRAPH COMPANY

ROBERT C. CLOWRY, President DELANCEY BROOKS, General Manager

THE LARGEST TELEGRAPH AND CABLE SYSTEM IN EXISTENCE. CABLE SERVICE TO ALL THE WORLD

25,000 OFFICES AND 50,000 ADDITIONAL TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE CONNECTIONS IN NORTH AMERICA

DIRECT ATLANTIC CABLES NEW YORK TO GREAT BRITAIN

CONNECTS AND WITH ANGLO-AMERICAN AND DIRECT U. S. ATLANTIC CABLES

DIRECT COMMUNICATION WITH GERMANY AND FRANCE, CUBA, WEST INDIES, MEXICO AND CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA

WITH PACIFIC CABLES TO ALASKA, HONOLULU, AUSTRALASIA, CHINA, THE PHILIPPINES, JAPAN, ETC.

MONEY TRANSFERRED BY TELEGRAPH AND CABLE TO ALL THE WORLD

DESIGN OFFICES IN PRINCIPAL CITIES OF GREAT BRITAIN AND THE CONTINENT. ALL FOREIGN TELEGRAPH SYSTEMS ACCEPT MESSAGES TO BE SENT

"Via WESTERN UNION"

6th May 1915

SEND THE FOLLOWING MESSAGE, SUBJECT TO TERMS ON BACK HEREOF, WHICH ARE HEREBY AGREED TO

To The Prince of Wales

Buckingham Palace London

I am overwhelmed with grief

To learn of the grave condition of

our father. Should his condition

permit please call his attention

To my letter of tenth April.

Cable me father's condition

John Guelph

106, Montague St, Brooklyn

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

Form H

WESTERN UNION

Cable Message

WESTERN UNION

THE WESTERN UNION TELEGRAPH COMPANY

INCORPORATED

ROBERT C. CLOWRY, PRESIDENT DELVIDERE BROOKS, GENERAL MANAGER

THE LARGEST TELEGRAPH AND CABLE SYSTEM IN EXISTENCE. CABLE SERVICE TO ALL THE WORLD

50,000 OFFICES AND 50,000 ADDITIONAL TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE CONNECTIONS IN NORTH AMERICA

DIRECT ATLANTIC CABLES NEW YORK TO GREAT BRITAIN
CONNECTS AND WITH ANGLO-AMERICAN AND DIRECT U. S. ATLANTIC CABLES
DIRECT COMMUNICATION WITH GERMANY AND FRANCE, CUBA, WEST INDIES, MEXICO AND CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA
WITH PACIFIC CABLES TO ALASKA, HONOLULU, AUSTRALIA, GUAM, THE PHILIPPINES, JAPAN, ETC.
MONEY TRANSFERRED BY TELEGRAPH AND CABLE TO ALL THE WORLD

GENERAL OFFICES IN PRINCIPAL CITIES OF GREAT BRITAIN AND THE CONTINENT. ALL FOREIGN TELEGRAPH SYSTEMS ACCEPT MESSAGES TO BE SENT "Via WESTERN UNION"

May 6th 1910

SEND THE FOLLOWING MESSAGE, SUBJECT TO TERMS ON BACK HEREOF, WHICH ARE HEREBY AGREED TO

To Prime Minister Asquith
London

I am grief stricken To learn Of
The grave condition Of my father
the King. Should it be possible
will you invite his Majesty's
attention To my letter Of Tenth
April. Please advise by cable. You
may know that I am the issue Of my
father's first marriage John Guelph

Form 11

WESTERN UNION **Cable Message** WESTERN UNION

THE WESTERN UNION TELEGRAPH COMPANY

INCORPORATED

ROBERT C. CLOWRY, PRESIDENT DELVIDERE BROOKS, GENERAL MANAGER

THE LARGEST TELEGRAPH AND CABLE SYSTEM IN EXISTENCE. CABLE SERVICE TO ALL THE WORLD

25,000 OFFICES AND 50,000 ADDITIONAL TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE CONNECTIONS IN NORTH AMERICA

DIRECT COMMUNICATION WITH GERMANY AND FRANCE, CUBA, WEST INDIES, MEXICO AND CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA

DIRECT AMERICAN CABLES NEW YORK TO GREAT BRITAIN
CONNECTS ALSO WITH ANGLO-AMERICAN AND DIRECT U. S. ATLANTIC CABLES
WITH PACIFIC CABLES TO ALASKA, HONOLULU, AUSTRALIA, GUAM, THE PHILIPPINES, JAPAN, ETC.
MONEY TRANSFERRED BY TELEGRAPH AND CABLE TO ALL THE WORLD

BRANCH OFFICES IN PRINCIPAL CITIES OF GREAT BRITAIN AND THE EUROPEAN CONTINENT. ALL FOREIGN TELEGRAPH STATIONS ACCEPT MESSAGES TO BE SENT "Via WESTERN UNION"

7th May 1915

SEND THE FOLLOWING MESSAGE, SUBJECT TO TERMS ON BACK HEREOF, WHICH ARE HEREBY AGREED TO

To King George
London

Words fail to express my grief.
You understand my position —
At the service of my country.

John Guelph

Copies of letters sent to King George, Premier Asquith, Right Hon. A. J. Balfour, Lord Rosebury, Lord Hugh Cecil, M. P., the Right Hon. Winston Churchill, Right Hon. John Redmond, Right Hon. David Lloyd-George:

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York.
19th May, 1910.

My Dear Brother:

Some weeks ago I wrote to our revered father intimating that I desired to introduce certain measures for the elucidation of the existing difficulties between the Lords and Commons.

My delay in submitting the same has been due to a delicate sense of my appreciation of father's superior knowledge and ability to solve the problem without interference on my part.

In forwarding the enclosed recommendation for the amendment of the Constitution to provide for the introduction of measures to establish an Imperial Parliament on the lines set forth therein, I trust that I am rendering a service to you and to my country.

Copies of the enclosed paper have been forwarded to the Premier and Lord Balfour and other representatives in Parliament.

You have my full sympathy in the trying circumstances in which our father's death has placed you.

Your affectionate brother,
(Signed) JOHN WETTIN-GUELPH.

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York.
19th May, 1910.

The Right Hon. Premier Asquith,
House of Commons,
London, S. W.

Dear Sir:

I have the honor to request that you will be good enough to bring before Parliament at an early date the enclosed recommendations for the amendment of the Constitution to provide for the establishment of a third House, to be composed of an equal number of Peers and Commons, and, if the same be deemed advisable, of Privy Councillors, as the Supreme Legislative Council to be presided over by the Sovereign.

It appears to me that an Imperial Parliament equally represented by each political party and by representatives of each Kingdom would constitute a supreme authority satisfactory to all parties and people of the United Kingdom, in that not only would each party and Kingdom be fairly represented according to their respective strength, but the plan would add dignity and authority to both the Lords and Commons rather than to detract from the authority as at present invested in each House.

I am, Sir, yours faithfully,
(Signed)
JOHN GEORGE EDWARD R. WETTIN-GUELPH.

PROPOSED AMENDMENT OF BRITISH CONSTITUTION

TO RESTORE ORDER IN BRITISH HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT

BY

JOHN GEORGE EDWARD REX WETTIN-GUELPH.

BILLS PASSED BY COMMONS AND VETOED BY HOUSE OF LORDS TO BE SUBMITTED TO

THE IMPERIAL PARLIAMENT,

COMPOSED OF SEVENTY MEMBERS OF PARLIAMENT,

SEVENTY PEERS AND SEVENTY PRIVY

COUNCILLORS.

THE SOVEREIGN TO PRESIDE OVER THE IMPERIAL

PARLIAMENT,

THE SUPREME LEGISLATIVE BODY.

TO THE HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT

OF

THE UNITED KINGDOM OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

WHEREAS, the dissensions between the House of Commons and the House of Lords are responsible for the present political crisis in the Upper and Lower Houses of the British Parliament and

WHEREAS, the existing crisis has caused a condition of chaos throughout the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, the British possessions beyond the seas and the Empire of India affecting commerce and concomitantly the peace and well-being of the people, a menace to the power and authority of our Constitutional Government and

WHEREAS, that in the event of the dissolution of the Constitutional Monarchy of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, the safety of the Empire would be jeopardized, and the peace of the Christian world endangered, and

WHEREAS, the remedies heretofore brought before Parliament with a view to the consummation of an amicable settlement of the existing differences between the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament are inapplicable in that the same are incompatible with the dignity of our Constitution and the prestige of the Empire, to wit:

1.—To abrogate the right of the power of veto of the Upper House is capable of only one interpretation, that is to say, the House of Lords

as proposed to be thereafter constituted would be impotent and meaningless as a legislative body, having no authority in the government of the Empire.

2.—To create Liberal Peers for no other purpose than that of procuring a majority vote of the latter over the House of Lords would be to make our Constitutional Government an object of ridicule, and, at the same time a cause for shame to the posterity of the British Empire.

3.—To abolish the House of Lords and to continue to observe the growing tendency to displace trained Statesmen in Parliament in favor of men who have enjoyed only limited educational advantages, and who possess but indifferent knowledge of foreign affairs, would eventuate in the dissolution of our Constitutional Monarchy, to which system of Government we owe our greatness as the first of the nations of the earth, only to be succeeded by a season of chaos and disaster far exceeding the tragic results of the Cromwellian blunder,

THEREFORE, I, John George Edward Rex of Great Britain and Ireland do maintain that the best interests of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, the British possessions beyond the seas, the Empire of India and the peace of the world will be protected by the perpetuation of the Constitutional Monarchy of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and I do.

THEREFORE, recommend to the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament the amendment of the Constitution to provide for the introduction and adoption of the measures and reforms hereinafter set forth for the consummation of the foregoing objects, so devoutly to be desired.

1.—To provide for the establishment of a Supreme Parliamentary Body to be designated as the Imperial Parliament or such other title that may be deemed appropriate.

The Imperial Parliament to be composed of seventy (or more) Members of the House of Commons, seventy (or more) Peers from the House of Lords, and (advisedly) seventy Privy Councillors. Members of the Imperial Parliament to be styled Imperial Councillors.

Imperial Councillors from the House of Commons shall be elected by ballot at any general or special session of the House duly called and shall be represented by all political parties and by the respective Kingdoms of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland in the exact ratio to the full strength of each and every party and Kingdom respectfully.

Imperial Councillors from the House of Lords shall in like manner be represented by all parties and kingdoms in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland in the exact ratio to the full strength of their respective parties, and shall be elected by ballot at any general or special session of the House of Lords.

Imperial Councillors from the Privy Council (if such be approved) shall in like manner be in the same ratio representing all political parties and Kingdoms of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and shall be appointed by the Sovereign of the Realm.

The Imperial Parliament shall be dissolved at the dissolution of each Parliament and re-elected at the first session of each new Parliament.

Vacancies through death or other causes shall be filled in the manner hereinabove described at the earliest session of Parliament.

FUNCTION OF THE IMPERIAL PARLIAMENT.

The Imperial Parliament shall be the Supreme Legislative Council and the adjudication on all legislative measures shall be final, subject only to the signature under the Great Seal of the Sovereign.

Each and every bill or legislative measure of every kind and description and of every Department of State brought before Parliament, regularly deliberated upon and duly passed by the House of Commons, which shall fail in regular passage through the House of Lords may be returned to the Commons for amendment. In the event of the Lords and Commons failing to agree or to arrive at a satisfactory issue, any and every such bill or legislative measure which shall so fail passage through the House of

Lords shall be submitted to the Imperial Parliament for final action and disposition thereof.

JOHN GEORGE ED. R. WETTIN-GUELPH.

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York, U. S. A.
16th May, 1910.

MESSAGE OF JOHN GEORGE EDWARD REX OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

To the Members of the Upper and Lower Houses of the British Parliament; to the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland; to the people of the Colonies and possessions of Great Britain beyond the seas; to the people of the Empire of India; to the Chief Magistrate and Ministers of the United States Government and to the people of the United States, under the courtesy and protection of which great Republic I have enjoyed the privileges of a guest and resident for a period of upwards of ten years, and to the Rulers and Ministers of the Church and State, and to the people of the civilized world, I, John George Edward Rex of Great Britain and Ireland hereby extend greeting; and desire to express my grateful appreciation for the courtesy and sympathy extended to me privately and through the public press in the bereavement which it has pleased Almighty God to bring upon me and the British Empire in the death of my revered father and King, His late Majesty Edward VII—a bereavement so great as is herein explained by reason of my painful separation from my father at

the hour of death, that I have resolved to proclaim before God, the Church and the civilized world, for the future enforcement of the observance of the moral and divine law; for the protection of England's motherhood, for the just and legitimate protection of the birthright of innocent offspring, whether issue of Royal or other parents, that I, John George Edward Rex of Great Britain and Ireland, the legitimate and lawful issue of the marriage of His late Majesty King Edward VII and the first Princess Consort, was unjustly and unlawfully deprived of my birthright as the first-born son of the rightful Sovereign of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and that I was still more cruelly and unjustly deprived of the birthright of every creature —the right of a mother's love and a father's care in infancy, childhood, and youth, by the unlawful exercises of traditional prejudices and jealousies of a so-called "royal custom," a custom as barbarous and cruel as it is unlawful against both Church and State, the unjust action of my late grandmother, Queen Victoria, as Sovereign, in the cruel separation of my father and my mother and myself; the painfulness of the separation having forced itself more and more upon me as each succeeding year brought us nearer the grave, and is now rendered inexpressibly great in consequence of the agony of soul arising from the ties of nature, which give to me the right to be present to render the last sacred offices of a first-born son to my father and to my country; and, I do hereby further proclaim it to be the duty of the people of

England and of the Christian world to demand the abolition of the so-called "royal custom" of royal polygamy which is an abomination in the sight of God and man, being a violation of the laws of God and of the Church and State; I further proclaim my firm intention and resolve that in the event of my failing to rouse the Christian world from its apathy in regard thereto by this appeal for the protection of the virtue and honor of motherhood, that I do by the Grace of God solemnly swear to devote my life to the enforcement of the law in this matter.

I proclaim in the name of justice that the so-called Royal Marriage Act of 1772, designated 12 George III C. II, to be and that the same is unconstitutional and a violation of the Statutes of Great Britain and of the canonical and civil disabilities by which marriages are regulated, and that the so-called Act was recognized by George III, the maker thereof, and by his successors, George IV, William IV, Victoria, and Edward, as unconstitutional and invalid; and that the aforesaid Monarchs, the Archbishop of Canterbury (during the reign of George III, also His Holiness the Pope of Rome, and all ecclesiastical and civil authorities from and including the reign of George III have ever recognized the validity of marriages, both as a sacrament and as a contract, where such have been solemnized contrary to the provisions of the so-called Royal Marriage Act; and I do

DEMAND, that measures shall be taken by the Houses of Parliament of the United Kingdom

of Great Britain and Ireland to proclaim the validity of any and all marriages which have been contracted contrary to the provisions of the so-called Royal Marriage Act, but otherwise in accordance with the provisions of the laws of Church and State, whether knowledge of such marriage has or has not been suppressed from the public, as in the case of the marriage of George IV, the validity of which was recognized by the then reigning Sovereign, George III, and other authorities, notwithstanding that the same was contracted in violation of the Act of William and Mary, known as the Bill of Rights, and also in violation of the 12 George III C. II; and as in the case of the first marriage of Edward VII, the first marriage of my half-brother, the Prince George, and others, and, I further

DEMAND of the Houses of Parliament of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland that the legitimacy of the issue of any and all marriages contracted by any descendant of George III as aforesaid in violation of the provisions of the so-called Royal Marriage Act (12 George III C. II) shall be duly recognized and recorded in the usual manner and that such issue of any and all such marriages shall be proclaimed by proper authority in their respective order of legitimate lineal succession as to their rightful succession to titles and estate according to law, irrespectively as to whether any such marriage may have been, or may not have been, set aside by Royal Proclamation, or by due process of law; I further

DEMAND of the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament that measures be taken forthwith to have the said so-called Royal Marriage Act of 1772 (12 George III C. II) declared to be null and void, the same being unconstitutional and invalid, in that the said so-called Act is in violation of the provisions of the Acts of Parliament and contrary to the provisions of all laws of Church and State by which marriages are regulated in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland; and that the Houses of Parliament shall cause the said so-called Act of 1772 (12 George III C. II) to be expunged from the Statutes and be duly proclaimed by proper authority as having been, from the date of its enactment, inoperable, illegal, and therefore null and void.

(Signed) JOHN GEORGE EDWARD REX
OF
GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York, U. S. A.,
12th May, 1910.

---

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York,
10th April, 1910.

My Dear Father:

The disquieting reports relative to your health cause me great anxiety.

Through the long years of my life, I have cherished the hope that you would pay due honor to my dear mother before you pass from this life and

that the time might come when you would make it possible for my mother and I to be reunited in an honorable way, in order that, in the absence of her husband's love and protection, her declining years might be brightened in some measure by the companionship of her son.

The ties of blood strengthen as advancing age brings us nearer to our eternal home and nearer to God; and each day the longing of my heart, hitherto suppressed, forces itself more and more that I may yet be privileged to enjoy some manifestation of your affection and the advantage of my father's counsel so long denied me, through our sense of duty to the State and Nation.

Above all personal consideration, however, the political crisis through which the nation is now passing renders your continued good health of the greatest importance to the Empire.

The uncertainty of life, in my own case as in yours; the political struggle in England, and the ominous outlook for the future of the Empire and of the Monarchy itself, should you be called to our fathers at so unfavorable a time, coupled with the very painful circumstances under which my mother and I have been obliged to live, sacrificing our personal interests and happiness in the interest of our country, and the equivocal position in which my mother and I might possibly find ourselves should you pass from this life before I shall have had an opportunity to bring before Parliament certain measures for industrial and economic reform in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, India and the Colonies, and which,

authorities agree, will furnish the solution of the political problems of the day, have led me to decide upon the publication of my Memoirs, a rough copy of the manuscript of some chapters of which I sent to you some time ago.

For some years past I have, as you are aware, endeavored to give the country the benefit of the results of my investigation for the improvement of the economic conditions and to raise the standard of the public health. This I have done without giving undue publicity to the identity of the author. My efforts to carry out my plans have, I believe, met with your approval, in that the moral support accorded by you to the same, as in the case of my systems for the prevention and treatment of cancer, which you caused to be forwarded to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund in September, 1906.

This evidence of your good-will, and appreciation of my work has strengthened my love for you, and has enabled me to meet with fortitude the persecutions to which I have been subjected as a result of the political intrigue which has been brought to bear against me. Actuated by respectful consideration for the memory of my revered Grandmother, her late Majesty, the Queen, and my love and devotion to you and my long-suffering mother, supported by my patriotic desire to maintain a discreet silence on a subject which so directly affects the Constitution of both Church and State, I have patiently submitted to false accusations, indignities and humiliating experience rather than expose and punish my persecutors.

This policy is now impossible, for the reason that so much publicity has been given to my identity as your son that any further evasion of the truth on my part can only result in unpleasant comment by the "yellow" newspapers in this country.

When Captain J. Regan called on me in 1894 in Rangoon, acting, I understood, in accordance with a command of the late Queen, my grandmother, with a request that I would not return to England, and intimating that if I would go to Australia a title would be conferred and an office given suited to my rank and birth, I declined the honor for the reason that I thought I could come to the United States and bury myself as I had done for so many years in India. In that opinion I was mistaken and I have many times regretted not having availed myself of the offer conveyed through Captain Regan.

The indiscretion of the officials in Rangoon in having communicated the contents of your private letter, as was done to unauthorized persons, led to my identity being made known throughout Burma, and, on my leaving Rangoon for America, missionaries or others must have written the facts to this country. In any case, news of my identity had preceded me to the United States. It was in vain that I evaded all questions of newspaper representatives, the story of my identity has been repeatedly published throughout this country during the past twelve years.

The publication of my Memoirs at this time, I believe, most opportune, in that the publication of

my plans for industrial development in England and Ireland, and the formation of Corporations to put the same in operation will at once be recognized as the means for the solution of the economic and political questions now perplexing all parties.

My work will, therefore, benefit the nation and, at the same time, may be the means of bringing my dear mother some happiness from the knowledge that I, her son, so long separated from both mother and father, have done something for my country at a time when such service was most needed.

I trust that you will excuse me, my dear father, for thus expressing myself in writing, but as time passes without my having an opportunity to put these matters to you personally, I have no other alternative.

I pray God that I may have the happiness to pay my respects to you in person in the near future and that we may enjoy in our maturer years the affection and companionship of father and son, of son and father, that personal affection and companionship so long denied to us by the intervention of a cruel fate.

Should it not be the will of God that we should be so blessed on earth, we *know* that in a few short years at most we will meet with those of our race who have gone before, where we will stand equal before the King of Kings—*father and son, and mother!* No more will a false and unholy custom permit of our separation as in this so-called Christian world.

Hoping to hear of your improved health, and with expressions of my deep affection,

I remain,

My dear father,

Your dutiful son,

(Signed) JOHN GUELPH.

Mr. Thomas Dougherty, who had represented me in certain matters relative to the publication of these Memoirs, being a loyal British subject, decided to assume the responsibility of reporting to His late Majesty, King Edward VII, the fact that I was arranging for the publication of my Memoirs.

He pointed out to His Majesty that the publication of this work would inevitably result in a revolution, and urged His Majesty to have the necessary steps taken to suppress the publication. Mr. Dougherty exercised great care to have his letter presented to His Majesty with the utmost secrecy.

The letter was written and despatched without my knowledge.

At the time that Mr. Dougherty wrote the above mentioned letter he was not aware of the fact that I had not only written to my father, King Edward, reporting my intention to publish my Memoirs, but that I had also forwarded the manuscript of the Summary and first three chapters in order that His Majesty might be fully cognizant of the nature of the publication and the effect that the same would produce in the British Empire.

Mr. Dougherty was, therefore, much surprised upon receiving the letter from Lord Knollys herewith reproduced.

On receipt of the said letter, Mr. Dougherty called on me and explained the nature of the letter addressed by him to the King and handed to me His Majesty's reply, with the remark that the said letter was conclusive evidence

WINDSOR CASTLE.
26th January 1910.

Sir,

I am commanded by The King to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 11th instant, and to express his regret that he is unable to assist you in the matter to which you refer of Mr John R.de Guelph.

I am, Sir,
Your obedient Servant,

T.C.Dougherty Esq.

that His Majesty not only declined to cause the suppression of the publication of my Memoirs, but, that the letter having been addressed to him, a dis-

interested party, was a definite acknowledgment of my action in publishing my Memoirs to establish before the Empire and the world at large my legal right as the eldest legitimate son and heir of the Sovereign.

The following letters dated the 12th and 17th November, 1902, from the Secretary of State for War, are reproduced in order to show:

1. That as the firm name under which I had previously conducted my business, *i.e.*, J. R. Guelph-Norman & Co. had been changed on the 26th June, 1902 (the date set for the Coronation of my father), to Guelph & Son, and being aware that the Department of His Majesty's Government could not enter into business relations with my Firm of Guelph without the sanction of the Sovereign, I wrote to my father requesting that he would command the War Office to enter into business relations with me under the name of Guelph.

2. The letter from the Secretary of State for War, dated 12th November, 1902, bears out the foregoing rule, in that it will be observed that the same is simply an acknowledgment of the receipt of said letter, but did not entertain the business referred to therein.

The letter from the Secretary of State for War of 17th November, 1902, in reply to the letter addressed to His Majesty, the King, it will be observed, entertained the business therein referred to, by the Command of His Majesty, the King.

The said Command of His Majesty to the Department to enter into business relations with the firm of Guelph & Son has been observed from that

Showing official and private recognition as the legitimate Prince of the House of Guelph, by the late King Edward VII

date by the various Departments of the British Government.

. If no reply please quote.

WAR OFFICE, LONDON, S.W.,

Ref 27 1990. D. C. 2. 18th November 1908

Sir,

I am directed by the Secretary of State for War to acknowledge

receipt of your letter of the 2nd inst.

relative to the Ready Prince Yupe.

I am,

Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

Director of Army Contracts.

Messrs. Guelph Non. Co.

W Y 200 10—01
1000 1—02

18 Phelan Building

San Francisco.

Form No. 1.

Registered No. 53 Gen. No. 2147 (Q.M.G.3)

Any further communication on this subject should be addressed to—
The Quarter-Master-General
to the Forces,
War Office,
London, S.W.,
and the above number quoted.

WAR OFFICE,
LONDON, S.W.,
17th November 1902

SIR,

I am directed by the Secretary of State for War to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 28th ultimo, addressed to His Majesty the King, on the subject of Food Products

which shall receive attention.

I am,
SIR,
Your obedient Servant,

Chas. M. Clarke.
Q.M.G.

Mr. R. Guelph-Norman,
Manager,
Guelph Line,
San Francisco,
California, U.S.A.

UNIV. OF
VIRGINIA

Official relations with British Government opened by command of King Edward VII, following his coronation, 1902

Any further communication on this subject should be addressed to—
The Secretary,
War Office,
London, S.W.,
and the following number quoted.

84/T/2100. (A.4.)

War Office,
London, S.W.
11th June, 1907.

Gentlemen,

With reference to your letter of the 28th ultimo, on the subject of a water penetrating projectile I am directed to acquaint you that an interview can be afforded on any day between the hours named in your letter when if sufficient details are furnished the question of the suitability of the invention for adoption into His Majesty's Service will be considered under the terms stated in the accompanying Memorandum for Inventors.

It is not considered necessary for the Inventor to bring samples to England at the present stage.

I am to add that no expenses which may be incurred in submitting details, as above, can be paid by this Department, and in the absence of details it is not possible to consider whether it would be desirable to take any special action such as would be the authorisation of expenditure in developing the invention.

I am,
Gentlemen,
Your obedient Servant,

H. Hallowes
for Director of Artillery.

Messrs Guelph & Co.,
20 Bishopsgate Street Without,
E.C.

GUELPH & SON, BANKERS AND BROKERS,
London and New York,
81 New Street, Suit 29-33.
10th January, 1910.

To His Majesty, King Edward VII.,
Buckingham Palace,
London, S. W.

Sire,

Permit me to state in further reference to my letter dated 4th November last relative to the above subject, and the reply thereto by His Excellency, the Secretary of State for India, under date of 10th December, that in view of the great distress existing among the masses of Your Majesty's Indian Empire, owing to the unhealthy economic conditions, the political unrest consequent on the long continued depression and pestilence, and the great need for the more expeditious development of the natural resources on more equitable lines than observed by existing monopolistic corporations, "rings," and combinations, the project referred to in my letter of 4th November, and previous communications, will be carried out by private enterprise in accordance with the provisions of the Company Act. A limited liability company having been duly incorporated for the purpose, the work will be commenced at once.

I respectfully beg to state that in the interest of the nation and of the Empire, I am about to have published in the form of a biographical sketch of my life, some particulars of the results of my researches, and my plans for industrial develop-

ment and economic reform in the United Kingdom of Great Britiain and Ireland, and in India.

My various projects for improving the conditions of the people and the political position of the Empire, having been endorsed by some of the highest authorities as the "most practical," "the greatest of public benefactions," and "the very thing needed," "the only means whereby the country can be saved," and as my efforts to introduce the said measures and to put the same in operation have been quietly, but systematically opposed on political grounds, the public being thereby deprived of the benefits that would immediately accrue from the inauguration of said operations, I am of opinion that the matter should be referred to the people of the United Kingdom and of the Empire, that they may judge as to whether the peace and welfare of the nation should be permitted to suffer, and the safety of the Empire be jeopardized through political intrigue against an individual, a loyal and faithful subject, who has given his life and sacrificed his happiness to serve his King and his people.

I enclose for the favor of Your Majesty's perusal and consideration the manuscript of the biographical sketch, not yet in the press. * * *

I trust that my effort in this direction may meet with Your Majesty's approval, and that the publication of the book will be for the public good, as I have reason to believe it will.

I beg to assure Your Majesty that it is most painful to me to find myself, owing to circumstances over which I had no control, brought so

prominently in the public eye, with no alternative but to publish my biography in order to give to my country that which I have long offered in a manner which did not necessitate my being publicly known in connection therewith.

I am Your Majesty's most obedient servant,
(Signed) JOHN R. DE GUELPH.

[On pages following will be found photographic reproductions of a few messages sent by Prince John to his father.]

London, 9th November, 1906.

To King Edward VII,
Sandringham:

"Accept my filial and dutiful congratulations on the sixty-fifth anniversary of Your Majesty's sonship of God. May He lengthen your days in the interest of peace and the public health.

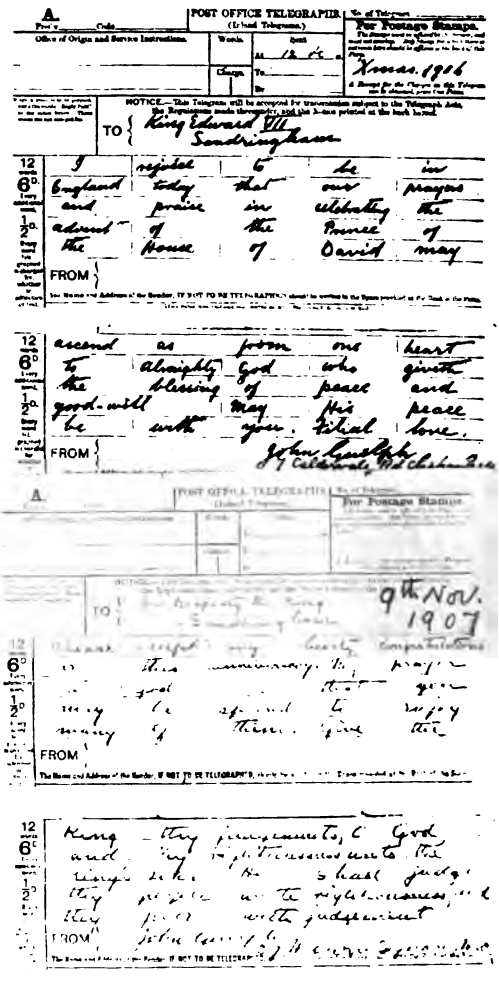
(Signed) "JOHN GUELPH."

London, 25th December, 1906.

To King Edward VII.,
Sandringham:

"I rejoice to be in England to-day that our prayers and praise in celebrating the anniversary of the nativity of the Prince of the House of David may ascend as from one heart to Almighty God, who giveth the blessing of peace and good will. May His peace be with you. Filial love.

(Signed) "JOHN GUELPH."



Christmas and birthday greetings from son to father

London, 9th November, 1907.

To His Majesty, the King,
Sandringham:

"Please accept my hearty congratulations on this anniversary. My prayer to God is that you may be spared to enjoy many of them. Give the King Thy judgments, O God, and Thy righteousness unto the King's son. He shall judge Thy people with righteousness, and Thy poor with judgment.

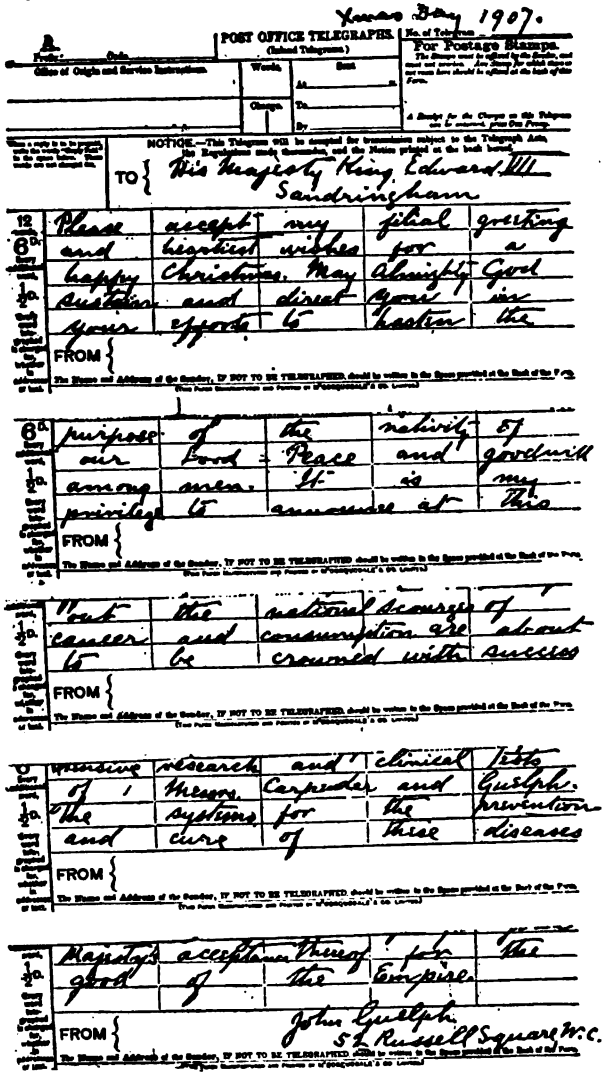
(Signed) "JOHN GUELPH."

London, 25th December, 1907.

To His Majesty, King Edward VII.,
Sandringham:

"Please accept my filial greeting and heartiest wishes for a happy Christmas. May Almighty God sustain and direct you in your efforts to hasten the consummation of the object and purpose of the nativity of Our Lord—'Peace and good-will among men.' It is my privilege to announce at this season that Your Majesty's untiring efforts to stamp out the national scourges of cancer and consumption are about to be crowned with success through the successful results of extensive research and clinical tests of Messrs. Carpender and Guelph. 'The system for the prevention and cure of these diseases is my Christmas offering to my King and Country.' I pray Your Majesty's acceptance thereof for the good of the Empire.

(Signed) "JOHN GUELPH."



Xmas Day 1907.

POST OFFICE TELEGRAPHS. (Inland Telegrams)

For Postage Stamps.

Office of Origin and Service Instructions.

Words. Sent At ... M. To ... By ...

Charge.

NOTICE.—This Telegram will be accepted for transmission subject to the Telegraph Acts, the Regulations made thereunder, and the Notice printed at the head hereof.

TO { His Majesty King Edward VII Sandringham

12 | Please | accept | my | filial | greeting
6d | and | heartiest | wishes | for | a
| happy | Christmas. | May | Almighty | God
| sustain | and | direct | your | son
| your | efforts | to | hasten | the

FROM {

The Name and Address of the Sender, IF NOT TO BE TELEGRAPHED, should be written in the Space provided at the End of the Form.

6d | purpose | of | the | nativity | of
| our | Lord | Peace | and | goodwill
| among | men. | It | is | my
| privilege | to | announce | at | this

FROM {

| out | the | national | scourge | of
| cancer | and | consumption | are | about
| to | be | crowned | with | success

FROM {

| extensive | research | and | clinical | tests
| of | Messrs. | Carpenter | and | Guelph.
| the | systems | for | the | prevention
| and | cure | of | these | diseases

FROM {

| Majesty's | acceptance | thereof | for | the
| good | of | the | Empire. |

John Guelph.
52 Russell Square W.C.

FROM {

Univ. of
California

Filial greetings touch the father's heart

POST OFFICE TELEGRAPHS.

Office Stamp.

If the Receiver of an Inland Telegram doubts its accuracy, he may have it repeated on payment of half the amount originally paid for its transmission, any fraction of 1d. less than ½d. being reckoned as ½d., and if it be found that there was any inaccuracy, the amount paid for repetition will be refunded. Special conditions are applicable to the repetition of Foreign Telegrams.

	£	s.	d.
Charges to pay			

Handed in at O H M S Sandringham at 6 11 pm

Received here at

TO Guelph 52 Russell Square London

The King commands me to thank you for good wishes contained in your telegram Personally

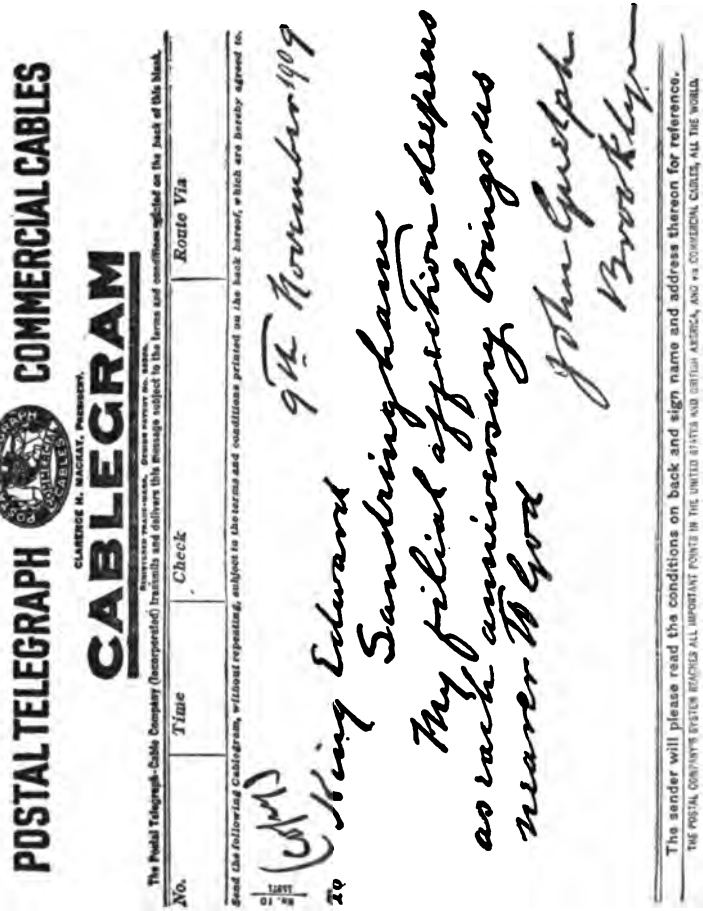
N.B.—This Form must accompany any inquiry made respecting this Telegram.

Fremont, Indiana, 9th Nov., 1908.

To King Edward, Sandringham:

"Please accept my dutiful and filial greetings. Many happy returns. (Signed) "JOHN GUELPH."

On November 9th, 1909, foreseeing His Majesty's death, I sent the following cablegram:


POSTAL TELEGRAPH COMMERCIAL CABLES

CABLEGRAM

CLARENCE H. MACKAY, President.

The Postal Telegraph-Cable Company (Incorporated) transmits and delivers this message subject to the terms and conditions printed on the back of this blank.

No. | Time | Check | Route Via

Send the following Cablegram, without repeating, subject to the terms and conditions printed on the back hereof, which are hereby agreed to.

To King Edward
Sandringham
My filial affection displays
as each anniversary brings us
nearer to God
9th November 1909
John Guelph
Brooklyn

The sender will please read the conditions on back and sign name and address thereon for reference.

THE POSTAL COMPANY'S SYSTEM REACHES ALL IMPORTANT POINTS IN THE UNITED STATES AND BRITISH AMERICA, AND VIA COMMERCIAL CABLES, ALL THE WORLD.

106 Montague Street,
Borough of Brooklyn,
New York City, N. Y., 17th June, 1910.

My Dear Brother George:

It has pleased Almighty God to remove our father from the Throne and from our midst, at a time when the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament were in the throes of a crisis without parallel since the Cromwellian blunder, and the Empire again faces a bloody revolution, which, should it come, would be followed by the inevitable disintegration of the Empire.

Had our father's life been spared for only a brief period the pending catastrophe would undoubtedly have been averted, by the judicious exercise of his influence with the contending parties. The imminent danger in which the crisis has placed the Empire would have led him to temper his Sovereign influence with his wisdom, superior judgment, and resolute courage in order to bring to a speedy end the turbulent unrest.

An all-wise Providence, the King of Kings, decreed otherwise; our father and King was not privileged to bring about the peaceful issue which he so devoutly desired.

The political crisis continues as acutely as before his passing and the turbulent unrest is still capable of developing into a bloody revolution.

Recognizing my duty to my country, as the eldest legitimate son of our father, to assist in the carrying out of the task of solving the difficult problems confronting the Houses of Parlia-

ment, I submitted to the Prime Minister, under date of 19th May, a plan suggesting the establishment of an Imperial Parliament, as a Supreme Parliamentary Council to be composed of Members of both the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament and representing all political parties and Kingdoms in the ratio of their respective strength in each House; a copy of which proposition was forwarded to you on the same date.

The seriousness of the present situation calls imperiously for immediate and resolute action in the interest of peace. Hence, my action in this matter. Were I but a private individual, I would consider it to be my duty to proffer a similar suggestion for the adoption of measures to avert the suffering and horrors of a revolution.

In view of the existing crisis in England, and of our relative positions in relation thereto, I deem it advisable in the interest of the public welfare to place before the people of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, some particulars concerning my life; and also an outline of the policy for industrial and economic reform as proposed by me from time to time and encouraged by our father, for the purpose of averting the present crisis and political unrest in the United Kingdom and India.

In order that the public may understand the motive which prompted me to devote my life to the service of my country with the object of improving the condition of the people, I have decided to include in this open letter to you, a few excerpts from my Memoirs, the MS. of which

was submitted to our father on the 10th January last with the intimation that the same would be published at an early date, and to which publication he raised no objection.

The following excerpts from the second chapter of my Memoirs (but subsequently eliminated) give expression to the natural characterictics of race and parentage which have impelled me to apply my energies for the emancipation of Ireland and India from the deplorable effects of our mal-administration of these countries, and for the removal of the burden of overtaxation in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, by the introduction of measures for industrial development, thereby ensuring the future maintenance of healthy economic conditions, and peace and prosperity, in the place of the long-continued condition of poverty and political unrest:

"Having been begotten and brought forth into being a human mite of potentialities under circumstances over which I had no control, I owe no apology to my contemporary beings, similarly introduced into the world, for my advent into life, for my royal parentage, my nationality, or for the racial characteristics inherited from my parents, grandparents and remoter ancestors. I am but the reincarnation of the spirit of my forefathers; and the characteristics transmitted to me by my parents and the progenitors of my race through succeeding generations constitute the dominant factor in the development of my own character.

"From the human mite of potentialities has evolved the mature man, and expression is given to the characteristics of my race; the manifestation of the actualities of the spirit of my progenitors; the exercise of the right of man in the world of men.

"The characteristics of race and parentage transmitted to offspring are modified by environment and confluence with sociological influences and by impressions of a physiological and psychological nature. The most potent agent, however, which an All-wise Creator 'breathed into' man, whereby the traits and characteristics inherited from parents and ancestors may be modified in the life of the offspring, in the super-cosmic consciousness, *the spiritus vitae,* the divine WILL, the 'breath' of life which united the finite with the Infinite Being.

"This great truth was impressed upon my mind while yet a child..... The lessons imparted to me by my foster-mother made a great impression upon me, to which I am indebted for the strength and fortitude with which I have at all times endeavored to meet and overcome the difficulties encountered in life, and which not infrequently have seemed to be well nigh insurmountable.

"'Always remember,' she was wont to say, 'that your father is the greatest man in the land; that he must occupy the most exalted station in the Kingdom, and that to him the nation must look for the maintenance of peace and continued prosperity. It is your duty to profit by the example

and experience of your grandmother, the Queen, and that of your father and forefathers. It is my earnest desire and prayer that you may become as great a man as is your father. What you lose by having been removed from the environments of the Royal Court, and by having been deprived of the advantages of the education and associations consistent with your royal birth, need not affect you unfavorably; on the contrary, it should prove to be a gain to you in the end. Being free from the trammels of Court and State and from the restrictions under which Princes of the Reigning Dynasty are brought up, you can obtain by personal application and by practical experience a more thorough training to qualify you for the exalted station to which your country and your people will some day call you, than you would receive under ordinary circumstances.' The strong impression thus made upon me in my childhood and early youth, coupled with the spirit of my ancestors, which latter was sorely wounded by the knowledge of the terrible agony of mind in which my dear mother was living, inspired me to devote my life to the service of my country and my people; to subordinate personal interests to the interests of humanity.

"The mental picture of my mother's tortured soul was an ever-present appeal to my sensitive nature for justice, and spurred me on to what might be termed super-human effort to achieve something worthy of a Prince of the House of Guelph; something of which my dear mother might be proud; something of which my country

might accept for the good of the Empire as a tribute of my devotion to my people under the most painful circumstances. It is the inspiration which has followed me through life, and which has many times saved me from death, which prompts me at this time when the Empire is facing a bloody revolution which threatens the safety of the Constitutional Monarchy and the prosperity of the people, to authorize the publication of this biography in the hope that by so doing the people of the British Empire and of the world at large may benefit from the results of my investigations, by the adoption of my policy leading to the establishment of universal peace. .....
For sixteen years I have been repeatedly urged by friends and others to publish a book giving an account of my travels, experiences, and researches. Such a book, I was assured, would bring me a fortune; and thus furnish capital with which to establish some of my projects for the improvement of the condition of the poor, and to inaugurate the great movement for economic reform by which alone can be brought about the consummation of the object so devoutly desired, the establishment of international peace."

As will be seen from the following extracts from my letter of 10th January, 1910, to my father, I steadfastly refused to publish my Memoirs during that period. The publication of such a work could have only resulted in civil war. The maintenance of peace was my first consideration, no matter what the personal sacrifice to myself might be. Hence, from the year 1893 up to the month

of December, 1909, I adhered strictly to the policy of putting forward my plans for industrial development and economic reform, and for raising the standard of the public health, without bringing myself prominently before the public as the originator of the measures in question:

"In the interest of the nation and of the Empire, I am about to have published in the form of a biographical sketch of my life, some particulars of the results of my researches, and of my plans for industrial development and economic reform in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and in India.

"My various projects for improving the condition of the people, and the political position of the Empire, having been endorsed by some of the highest authorities as being the 'most practical,' 'the greatest of public benefactions,' 'the very thing needed for the salvation of the country,' 'the only means whereby the country can be saved;' and as my efforts to introduce the said measures and to put the same in operation have been quietly but systematically opposed on political grounds, the public being thereby deprived of the benefits that would immediately accrue from the inauguration of said operations, I am of opinion that the matter should be referred to the people of the United Kingdom and of the Empire, that they may judge as to whether the peace and welfare of the nation should be permitted to suffer, and the safety of the Empire be jeopardized through political intrigue against an individual, a loyal and faithful subject, who has given his life

and sacrificed his happiness to serve his King and his people."

For many years past I have kept my father advised as to my various plans for improving the economic conditions, and he was aware that my practical experience in various branches of the Service, including the Army, Police, Prison Service, Educational Department, and the Anglican Church Missions, covering a period of about nineteen years, supplemented by some fifteen years of active public work, gave me ample opportunity to study, and that I was taking full advantage of that opportunity to familiarize myself with the political and economic conditions and the needs of the people at home and abroad. My father also knew that it would have been impossible for me or any other member of our family to have benefited from such an excellent opportunity to investigate by actual experience and personal contact with the people and their environments, had I not been free from the trammels of court etiquette.

It was only by living the life of the people that I was able to familiarize myself with the actual conditions of both the rich and the poor, and to solve the problem whereby our work-houses may be converted into industrial and educational institutions, and thus convert the large army of paupers and criminals into wage-earners and taxpayers, and the multitude of beggars into useful citizens, to contribute their per capita toward the Old Age Pension Fund and the national revenue; and thereby reduce the taxation by fifty per cen-

tum, and increase the revenue in the same proportion.

My investigations were commenced in Ireland in the seventies. Three years' study of the economic conditions caused me to consider what plans could be devised for the relief of that long-suffering people. It has been with feelings of deep concern that I have watched the painful struggle by the people of that country for existence since that time, and my inability to help them hitherto has caused me much regret.

I am now taking steps for the development of the mineral resources of Ireland and for the restoration of her manufacturing and other industries.

So long as Ireland continues an integral part of the United Kingdom, it is the imperative duty of the Government to protect the commerce of that country in the same degree as it is to protect the commerce of England, Scotland and Wales.

This has not been done. The development of the mineral resources of Ireland has been handicapped; her manufacturing industries ruined and even her agricultural pursuits crippled for many years past.

England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales are well able to supply the English market, and it is our imperative duty to see to it that home industries are protected, and domestic trade encouraged and supported.

It is to be regretted that Denmark, through the influence of Danish Rule in England, has "cornered" the English market, and that provisions of all kinds are imported from Denmark, while

the Irish agriculturists and manufacturers suffer in consequence of the Danish invasion of the rights of our domestic commerce.

Public sentiment demands that this evil be remedied by the protection of our domestic trade against foreign monoply.

The emancipation of Ireland from the misery and suffering inflicted upon that unhappy country, is the first duty of the Government.

The impoverished condition of Ireland, resulting from centuries of oppression under the feudal system of landlordism (changed only in recent years by legislation), and its relation as a part of the United Kingdom, gives to that country the equal right with England to supply the English market, and to receive the profits of their industry and labor.

Industrial development and the establishment of healthy economic conditions in Ireland, as also in India, affords the only solution of the Irish question and the political unrest in India.

I have repeatedly put this matter before the proper authorities during the last ten years, and our father, as Sovereign of the Realm, did his best, as may be seen from the correspondence, to cause my plans to be adopted, and encouraged in every way the introduction of the measures in question. As a matter of fact operations on the above lines were inaugurated, and the same received the warmest support of the press and the public, but owing to political intrigue the work has been greatly retarded.

As explained in my letter of 4th November, 1909,

to our father, a limited liability company was registered for the purpose of carrying out the project (in 1903). "Arrangements were concluded with banks and trust companies to underwrite the Company's securities in order to absolutely protect shareholders from possible loss. Every share of capital was guaranteed by the issuance of gold bonds, bearing interest at six per cent. per annum, and held in trust by the trustees for the stockholders, and protected by real estate security of double the value of the amount of the investment, in addition to having the first claim on the entire assets of the Company.

"The Corporation had acquired the rights to irrigation (and both machinery and other assets valued at $10,000,000, or double the amount of the total Capitalization) preparatory to the inauguration of the proposed operation .....

"The Corporation in question having taken every precaution to safeguard the interests of shareholders, and having incurred considerable expense for the carrying out of the enterprise which all authorities to whom the project was submitted declared would double the revenue of districts in which it might operate, in less than ten years, ... was declared to be the 'only means whereby India could be saved to the British Rule,' contemplated bringing suit against the Secretary of State for India ..... Foreseeing that any action that might be brought by the said Corporation against the Secretary of State for India, who had apparently confounded an individual, myself, with a duly registered Corpora-

tion, would inevitably lead to very unpleasant developments, involving explanations of the identity of the director of the Company who had been thus attacked, I caused the matter to be dropped."

The political intrigue through which this most important cause was maliciously interfered with, to the detriment of not only the Empire of India and its suffering multitudes, but of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland as well, has been in operation for many years.

Under date of 4th February, 1897, I addressed a letter to the Viceroy and Governor-General in India recommending the introduction of certain measures to check the threatened epidemic of bubonic plague in Bombay, which was then only in a mild form as compared with later developments. I pointed out that unless the measures proposed by me were adopted, that the epidemic would continue for years and that millions of lives would be sacrificed. The Viceroy, following the advice of his incompetent medical Council, took the position that there would be no epidemic, declaring that the few isolated cases presented no danger to the city, and flouted my recommendations simply through personal prejudice and jealousy. According to the policy followed by him at that time, it was better that millions of lives be sacrificed than that credit should be given to me for averting such calamity. The plague continued, and according to statistics some eight million lives have been thus wantonly sacrificed.

My plan for the development of the natural resources of India on modern scientific lines by pri-

vate enterprise supported by the Government by means of appropriations to provide for loans to encourage such industrial development by indiginous corporations, to remove the evils of foreign monopolies and combination rings, and the loss of lives sacrificed by famine, and the political unrest in India, while approved by the highest authorities of England and India, and certain of my recommendations adopted by the Empire, were quietly but systematically opposed for the reason that it was thought that my growing popularity in India might prove to be too powerful to admit of my identity being longer concealed as the eldest legitimate son of our father, and, therefore, the rightful successor to the Throne of England, and to the Empire of India. It was considered by the principals of the political intrigue to be better that India should suffer, and that a bloody revolution should wrest India from British Rule rather than justice should be done to myself and my mother.

Under date of 25th September, 1906, I forwarded to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund (of which you were then the President), a memorandum on the *Guelph Sterilization System* in the treatment of cancer. I also addressed a letter to His Majesty the King officially on the same date, and forwarded a copy of the said memorandum on the Guelph System for the treatment of Cancer. In a letter dated "Buckingham Palace, 28th September, 1906," the King conveyed his thanks to me for having introduced the Guelph System, and advised me that he had caused the

same to be "Forwarded to the Secretary of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund."

In your presidential address at the annual meeting of the General Committee in July, 1907, acting, no doubt, in good faith, you stated that, "The fact that alleged cures are being submitted to impartial tests, ... will, I hope, assure the public that everything will be done to take full advantage of any means that may be discovered to alleviate suffering" and, again, "It is recognized that the work is conceived and carried out in a liberal spirit; that whatever facts are ascertained are immediately made known to every one; that our material is freely placed at the disposal of all who are qualified to use it to good advantage; that our staff is not working for its own ends, but with a whole-hearted desire to help on a solution of the problem.

"Although many new facts have been ascertained, they do not as yet justify hopes of a new treatment." You expressed the hope that, "The public will continue by its sympathy and financial assistance to support the work of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, and be willing to exercise the patience necessary for prolonged and systematic investigation."

My reason for having submitted the Guelph System for the treatment of cancer to my father, the King, was because physicians with whom I had conferred in London, explained that Dr. Bashford would not submit to "impartial tests," or to any test at all, anything that I might submit to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund. Up-

on my declaring my intention to send the matter through the Founder and Patron of the Fund, the same gentleman replied that, "The professional clique by which the Fund is dominated, would exercise its 'professional' prerogative and 'turn down' the King with as scant ceremony as would be shown to me." Bashford could not afford to take any chances on the honors and awards for such discovery coming to a son of the King, whose popularity might prove to be a little embarrassing to the other branch of the family.

It was, therefore, with a view to ascertaining whether or not a public institution of such importance as the Imperial Cancer Research Fund would thus insult the Sovereign, the Patron of that Institution, and suppress this matter, thereby becoming guilty of the diabolical offence of refusing to accept a treatment for cancer from which disease some millions of lives are wantonly sacrificed each year.

The Guelph System was suppressed by Dr. Bashford; the matter was not even put up to the General Committee. The King was ignored, and this important Imperial Cancer Research Fund, which assumes the authoritative attitude of a central organization which, as you claimed in your address above referred to, has "influenced the whole nature of investigation at home and abroad," is placed in the ridiculous position of a one-man institution, public funds squandered, and life sacrificed, reports falsified, the public deceived, and asked to "exercise patience," to suffer and die by millions per year, victims of a political in-

trigue against the unfortunate Prince, who has spent his life to save victims of this dread disease.

In order to make this important matter perfectly clear to you and to the public, I must state that, having been advised beforehand that my system would be suppressed on political grounds, i.e., as it was not desired by certain persons at Court that I should acquire any popularity, I was careful to state in my memorandum that the late Reverend George W. Carpender, M.D., (Ann Arbor, Michigan, '53), for forty years the most noted cancer specialist in the United States of America, "was for years associated with the writer (myself) in the practice of medicine and in scientific research, for the perfection of the system of medical treatment for cancer and consumption," and further that that eminent specialist, who had hundreds of cases sent to him from every part of the country, and even from England, "had the remarkable and enviable record of no deaths and no return of cancer, and no failures in the hundreds of cases treated by him. I invited investigation, and requested that representatives of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund should be appointed to "watch cases then under treatment in the Ladbroke Nursing Homes and at South End." The disease implies unspeakable suffering and a most terrible death. Millions of lives are sacrificed and the governments of the civilized world, the medical and all public-spirited people are taking full advantage of any means discovered to alleviate suffering, and to discover a cure for cancer.

My father wrote me a second letter on the above subject, under date of 23rd October, 1906, expressing his "regret" that he was "unable to do anything further in the matter." This intimation was, of course, intended to convey to me the wish of my father that I allow the matter to stand over for the time being.

The foregoing account of this important subject speaks for itself. Conservative solicitors, however, have not hesitated to state that the same would be rejected by the public as incredible. The idea that a public institution, supported by public funds, in the interest of a matter of such vital importance as that in which the Imperial Cancer Research Fund is engaged would suppress all knowledge of a probable cure submitted to that institution by the Founder and Patron of the Fund and Sovereign of the Realm certainly justifies such inference on the part of every intelligent man and woman. The following copies of letters from the Secretary of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund and from Dr. Bashford (the Fund itself) furnish irrefutable evidence as to the truth of my statement that the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, with its Royal Patrons, its Vice-Presidents composed of the cream of the United Kingdom, its millionaire supporters, and its multitude of sympathizers is, in reality, a "one-man show," —Bashford.

"IMPERIAL CANCER RESEARCH FUND

Examination Hall,
Victoria Embankment,
London, W. C., 3rd October, 1906.

"Sir: I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 25th ult., with enclosed memorandum, and I have to inform you that it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance the application of secret remedies [the Guelph Systems are not 'secret remedies,' but, like Koch's and other proprietary preparations which have been submitted to 'impartial tests,' were put forward in accordance with the general custom of presenting proprietary preparations] the nature of which has not been the subject of independent investigation in our laboratories.

"I have to add that a somewhat similar communication addressed by you to His Majesty the King has been forwarded to this Office.

"I am, Sir,
"Yours faithfully,
(Signed) "FREDERIC C. HALLETT,
"Secretary."

"IMPERIAL CANCER RESEARCH FUND

Examination Hall,
Victoria Embankment,
London, W. C., July 15th, 1906.

"Sir: With reference to your letter of the 11th inst., I have again perused your previous com-

munication and the memorandum accompanying them, and I beg to inform you that I am unable to take any action in regard to the matter to which you draw attention.

"I am, Sir,

"Yours faithfully,

(Signed) "E. F. BASHFORD."

To any person of ordinary intelligence reading between the lines of the last paragraph of the first letter the contempt in which the sovereign authority of the King is held is most apparent.

I trust that the foregoing brief outline of the measures which I now intend to introduce will appeal to my people and to the civilized world as being worthy of consideration and support.

I trust, too, that you will see the advisability of accepting this communication in the peaceful spirit in which it is tendered to you.

The peace of the Empire rests with you and the British Parliament. I wish to be distinctly understood, however, that since the death of our father, I am no longer under obligations to remain silent and inactive; and, further, that in the event of yourself, the British Parliament and the people of the United Kingdom failing to recognize the justice of my position as the rightful heir-at-law of our father, the late King Edward VII, and the value of the reforms which I intend to introduce in the interests of universal peace, it is my intention to take such measures as may be necessary to enforce the recognition and acceptance of the same for the good of the Empire.

This being a national question, I desire to still inscribe myself, notwithstanding forty-nine years self-sacrifice on the part of my mother and myself, as

Your affectionate brother,
(Signed) JOHN R. AND I.

Domiciled in the United States of America, under the title of Prince John De Guelph, in which title all correspondence should be addressed.

To His Majesty King George V.,
Buckingham Palace,
London, S. W., England.

---

106 Montague Street,
Brooklyn, New York,
28th June, 1910.

The Rt. Hon. Hugh Courtenay F. Luttrell, M.P.,
The House of Commons,
London, England.

Dear Sir:

My attention has been called to the "pointed objection" raised by you at a recent hearing of the Regency Bill in the House of Commons to the clause in which it is stated that, "if the heir-apparent marries without the Regent's consent the marriage shall be null and void."

The question as asked by you, according to press reports, was, "Does not this provision set up a direct temptation to enter into a marriage knowing it can be lightly set aside afterward? . . . Such a law would be very severe on any poor

girl who might fall in love with her sovereign. She would be punished while he goes scot-free."

I desire to convey to you my sincere thanks for the bold stand taken by you as a champion of the virtue of England's womanhood and motherhood and the rights of legitimate issue of marriages contracted in accordance with the provisions of the several Acts of Parliament and the canonical and civil disabilities by which marriages of Kings, princes, and peasants are regulated in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.

The Prime Minister in framing or presenting the said Regency Bill was, of course, familiar with the provisions of the 12 George III C. II of 1772, designated as the Royal Marriage Act.

It must, therefore, be apparent to any person of ordinary intelligence that the clause herein referred to was embodied in the said Regency Bill for one of two reasons:

1. That the said Royal Marriage Act (12 George III C. II) is admitted to be contrary to the provisions of all other laws of both Church and State, and, therefore, invalid and inoperable, as it was so recognized to be by George III, George IV, William IV, and also by the ecclesiastical and civil authorities and by the general public during the reign of the aforesaid sovereigns, or,

2. That the same was inserted for the purpose of testing the sentiment of the British Parliament as at present constituted, and of the British public in this twentieth century of advanced civilization.

I have the honor to state that copies of the enclosed papers were forwarded to my half-brother, known as King George V, to the Prime Minister, to the Rt. Hon. A. J. Balfour, to Hon. David-Lloyd-George, and to a number of other Members of the Upper and Lower Houses of Parliament some time prior to the framing of the said Regency Bill.

I trust that you will give the enclosed papers, my Message to the Members of the Houses of Parliament, and "May God Defend the Right," your careful consideration and loyal support.

As intimated in the enclosed documents it is my purpose to abolish this diabolical custom of royal polygamy.

Very sincerely yours,
(Signed) JOHN EDWARD WETTIN-GUELPH.

EXTRACT FROM A LETTER FROM PRINCE JOHN R. DE GUELPH TO HIS MAJESTY KING EDWARD VII.

50 Broadway, New York,
4th November, 1909.

To His Majesty King Edward VII,
Buckingham Palace,
London, S. W.

Sire: In view of the political unrest in India, ... I am once more constrained to place my services at Your Majesty's command.

In my communication to you, under date of 12th December, 1902, I placed before Your Majesty some details of the results of my investigations in India, ... I ventured to assure you

that I was prepared to undertake any mission of a diplomatic nature in India, Burma, Siam, Japan, or China. I advised Your Majesty that the Japanese Government conferred with me, through a Commission, in reference to the political, commercial and economic conditions in China, Japan, Corea, Siam, Burma, India, and Ceylon.

* * * * * * *

In 1903, 8th January, I again took the liberty to address Your Majesty on the subject of an improved policy for the administration of India, whereby the economic conditions would be materially improved, and the political unrest would be practically removed.

Following upon the communication here referred to, which was heartily commended by statesmen, princes, the press and the public throughout India, I submitted to the India Office a plan which I proposed to carry out in India for the improvement of the economic and commercial conditions in the Indian Empire, on the lines of my proposed policy herein referred to, for the extensive development of the natural resources of the country on modern scientific lines, by the formation of an indigenous corporation, to be controlled and operated by local capitalists, to counteract the deplorable effect of existing trusts, or combination rings, which render ineffective the efforts of Your Majesty's Government to improve the prevailing conditions of poverty and distress among Your Majesty's subjects in India.

The said plan was submitted to the late Illius A. Timmis, the well known engineer of No. 2

Great George Street, Westminster, who, after having made a tour of inspection through India and Burma, "heartily approved" of the plan in its entirety.

The plan was also submitted to the press in this country. The project was immediately taken up by the press throughout India. A few brief extracts from editorials of leadings newspapers, from letters received from the editor of the leading Hindu paper in Calcutta, and from prominent bankers and other authorities, will convey to Your Majesty some idea of the far-reaching effect that the operation of my plan in India must have had in removing the political agitation, and restoring peace and prosperity throughout the Empire. The *Armita Bazaar Patrica,* under the head of "Glad Tidings for India," stated, "The news is too good to be believed, but it seems the salvation of India is at hand." The project was attributed to Lord Curzon, who was then Viceroy of India. The article, as the result of this error, continued, "Lord Curzon is the alleged saviour." At the close of this article of a column and a half the following statement was made, which showed the depth of feeling and gratitude manifested by Your Majesty's subjects in India at the bare prospect of the introduction of measures which they knew would forever solve the terrible problem of famine in India: "Here we end our meagre account of a project which will fill the Indian's heart with gladness and hope."

It was necessary for the Company to remove the misunderstanding with reference to the con-

nection of Lord Curzon's name with the project. When that was done, one of the leading bankers in Calcutta wrote, "The press and the public demand to know to whom India is indebted for this project, which means practically the fingering of the plague spot in India." The editor of the above-named paper wrote, "As soon as we saw an account of the project in the *Philosophical Journal* we were led to take immediate notice of it; we saw that it was just what was wanted for the salvation of India. We will give our life's blood for the success of the enterprise."

A Prince of India wrote, offering the Company two thousand acres of land for the purpose of the first of the proposed schools of technology. And many other offers of coöperation and support were sent in to the Company. Bankers wrote that "there would be no hitch in raising the entire amount of capital required, when once the work was launched." As a matter of fact the entire allotment of securities promised to the bankers of India was reserved before the share lists were opened.

A limited liability company was registered for the purpose of carrying out the project. Arrangements were concluded with banks and trust companies to underwrite the Company's securities, in order to absolutely protect shareholders from possible loss. Every share of the capital stock was guaranteed by the issuance of a gold bond, carrying interest at six per cent per annum, and held in trust by the trustees for the stockholders, and protected by real estate security of double the

value of the amount of investment, in addition to having the first claim on the entire assets of the Company. A measure that was deemed advisable to meet the contingencies of the possible interference with the Company's business through the outbreak of war (see facsimile of prospectus).

The Corporation had acquired the rights of irrigation machinery and other assets preparatory to the inauguration of the proposed operations. American capital was offered for the financing of the enterprise, but was declined for the reason that it was considered desirable to employ British capital.

Your Majesty may be surprised to learn that when the Corporation in question was all prepared to inaugurate the work, the representatives of the Corporation in India were visited by local officials, who brought such pressure to bear upon the representatives that they were compelled, much against their will, to drop out.

The Corporation in question having taken every precaution to safeguard the interests of shareholders, and having incurred considerable expense for the carrying out of an enterprise which all authorities to whom the project was submitted declared would double the revenue of districts in which it might operate, in less than ten years, and, at the same time, was declared to be the "only means whereby India could be saved to the British rule," contemplated bringing suit against the Secretary of State for India, for this unheard of action against their representatives.

I subsequently learned that the trouble was the

result of some personal feeling against myself. It was not deemed wise by certain parties to have *me* identified with so popular an enterprise as that which had already caused me to be acclaimed by the press throughout the Empire as "The saviour of India." Foreseeing that any action that might be brought by the said Corporation against Your Majesty's Secretary of State for India, who had apparently confounded an individual, myself, with a duly registered Corporation, *would inevitably lead to very unpleasant developments involving explanations of the identity of the director of the Company who had been thus attacked, I caused the matter to be dropped.*

I have no hesitation in saying that the action of the officials in India in having opposed the inauguration of this most worthy enterprise, which, in the words of a prominent banker and the press of all India, "Had been received with open arms by all classes and all communities," has played a very important part in the rapid development of the "terrorist" activities referred to at the beginning of this letter.

It is most regrettable that any personal feeling against an individual should be permitted to interfere in any way with a matter of such far-reaching political importance as the subject herein referred to!

When in London in 1907 I addressed His Excellency, the Secretary of State for India, on the subject of the activity of the socialist party in India, offering to render Your Majesty's Government such service as my intimate knowledge of the

situation there would enable me to do. I regret to have to state that my loyalty to Your Majesty's person and throne was not appreciated as I had hoped it would have been; presumably for the same reason that my previous efforts to serve Your Majesty have been opposed by a narrow and short-sighted administration, which is responsible for much of the political unrest in Your Majesty's Indian Empire.

If Your Majesty will do me the honor to command that I may be permitted to serve Your Majesty's Government and the Public Service, by the carrying out of my plans for the improvement of the economic conditions in India and for the peaceful adjustment of the present political disturbances throughout the Empire, in such capacity as Your Majesty may be pleased to command, I beg to assure you that the opinions expressed by so many authorities will be substantiated in every particular, and that the troublesome events, and the long continued unrest in India will be rapidly overcome and peace and prosperity firmly established.

If for any reason Your Majesty should deem it inadvisable that I should personally be identified with the active work, or in the actual carrying out of the proposed improvements, I shall be happy to arrange my plans for the industrial development of India, and to submit my suggestions for the future policy for the better administration of Your Majesty's Indian Empire, in such manner that the same may be carried out in such manner as Your Majesty may approve. As stated before,

I am indifferent as to receiving personal honors, my life has been devoted to, and my investigations conducted in, the entire interest of Your Majesty and the British Empire.

I pray that my services and loyal devotion to your Majesty's person and to the Throne may be acceptable.

I am Your Majesty's Most Obedient Servant,

JOHN R. DE GUELPH.

monthly payments semi-annually by natural interest and part payment of principal on mortgage. Third. Because the security is absolute. No contingency in the money market, no panic, no bank failure, can affect the value of bonds thus secured. And, lastly, because the Preferred Shares command a higher rate of interest than paid by banks, and because the subscriber holds shares in one of the most profitable enterprises known, and, while not looking for the dividends above quoted, viz. of 6s to 15s per cent as received by bonuses in the Asiatic trade, he is practically assured of handsome returns and a permanent income, that will furnish him with a competence to make him or her independent.

Organization. The Lyon-Continental and Pan-Indian Commercial Company, Limited, was organized as the result of intimate relations between Europe, America and Asia, and the demands of the enormous increase in trade between Great Britain and the United States with Asia.

The originator of the plans to be carried out by the Company has had an experience extending over twenty-four years in the Asiatic trade question. He is a man thoroughly familiar with the peoples of Asia, their customs and manners, religion, language and commerce. The project is endorsed by leading authorities of Europe and Asia, the press and the people.

Management. The management of the Company is *conservative*; its policy is *progressive*. The directorate appointed for purpose of organization is composed of men of experience, whose honor and integrity have stood the test of time and the fire of opposition.

3s per cent on a million tons would be larger than 100 per cent on ten thousand tons.

All true men, moreover, would

Famine and Plague to be Removed. support the intervention for the higher motive of removing the curse of famine and pestilence from the great peninsula of India, which is reducing its prosperous inhabitants to a condition that beggars description.

Farming Colonies and Institutes of Technology. The general agents of the Company in India, Messrs. Guelph & Son, are engaged in securing large tracts of land by lease and purchase, for the purpose of farming, milling and manufacturing. Farming colonies and institutes of technology will be established on a practical basis. Existing colonies are conducted at a great profit.

Lands will be leased and sub-leased to farmers at moderate rates.

System. The Company will enter into an agreement with the lessees of its lands to cultivate long-stapled cotton. The general agents are now in correspondence with the leading cotton centers of Europe, with a view to furnishing long-stapled cotton, for which there is an increasing demand.

Modern Machinery and Methods to be Introduced in India. The Company is arranging for the introduction of modern machinery and farming implements for the development of the agricultural, manufacturing and mining industries in India. The same to be sold, leased or hired for cash or other consideration. The S. S. "Scottish," which will leave early, will take the first consignment of machinery.

Representatives also of Great Britain, America and Asia will shortly be added to the already efficient Board.

Objects. With the confidence born of knowledge the Company has pleasure in announcing its immediate objects.

Shipping. The introduction of a through line of steamship service between the Pacific Coast, United States of America and British Columbia with India and ports of call has been mentioned. Also for the Coast Trade in Asia.

The first steamer, the "Scottish," will sail as soon as arrangements have been completed. Other steamers to follow in regular order; the schedule will be advertised.

Chapter of Ships. Pending the construction of new steamers for the Company, the Maritime Agency, 130 Leadenhall Street, London, E. C., England, have been appointed agents to ensure charter on vessels for the Company.

Nine Mills. The construction of five rice mills has been mentioned, and will be proceeded with at the earliest possible date. Three in Burma and two in Bengal. Others will be added as needed.

The net profits of existing mills are from 60 per cent to 150 per cent per annum on investment. A more reasonable return on invested capital will better the condition of the cultivators, increase the area for cultivation of the product, which will increase the business, hence enhance the profits of the Company, on the principle that

Banking. Banks of Commerce will be opened in Calcutta and other centers, for the accommodation of our patrons. These will be extended to other centers as occasion demands.

Pandit Sunder Laul Misser, a prominent Indian Barrister of Calcutta, has been appointed Commissioner and Representative in India, and will be entrusted with this important branch in conjunction with the officers of the Company.

Irrigation. The British Government has introduced extensive systems of irrigation in India upon scientific lines, with a view to overcome the ever increasing frequency of famine. The most elaborate of these systems being the Ganges Canal with its branches, and the canal system of the deltas of the rivers Mahanadi, Godavari, Krishna and Kaveri. The five rivers of the Punjab have also their great canals; and the Indus is to Sind what the Nile is to Egypt. All of the above systems involved an expenditure to the British Government of £25,000,000.

Desert Land Reclaimed. About two million acres of desert land in the Punjab have been irrigated and colonized through the Chenab Canal, at a cost of £3 per acre. In 1901, after deducting amount of large grants made to the settlers, a net profit of 18 per cent on invested capital was shown. When the system is completed and in full working order not less than 25 per cent per annum will be realized.

It is requested that in any further communication on this subject the under-mentioned letter and number may be quoted, and the reply addressed to the Under Secretary of State of India,
India Office,
Whitehall,
London, S. W.
J. & P. 4490.

India Office,
Whitehall,
London, S. W.,
December 10th, 1909.

Sir: I am directed by the Secretary of State for India to inform you that your Petition dated 4th November last has been laid before the King and that His Majesty was not pleased to issue any commands thereon.

I am, Sir,
Your Obedient Servant,
R. Ritchie.

John R. De Guelph.

THE LADBROKE NURSING ASSOCIATION AND HOMES,

111 Ladbroke Grove, North Kensington,
London, W., and 6, Royal Terrace,
Southend-on-Sea.

September 25th, 1906.

To His Majesty, Edward VII.,
King of Great Britain and Ireland, etc.,
Buckingham Palace, S. W.

Sire: I beg to address Your Majesty as the founder and patron of the Edward VII Sanatorium for Consumptives, and to invite Your Majesty's attention to the arrangements recently made by the Red Cross Army Medical Corps of the Royal Asiatic Academy of Science, for the admission and treatment of cases of consumption and cancer, in the Ladbroke Nursing Homes in London, and at Southend-on-Sea. Cancer cases will be received in the London Home, at 111 Ladbroke Grove, North Kensington, W.; and consumptives, in most cases, at the Home at Southend-on-Sea, Essex.

The system of treatment to be followed is the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption," adopted by the Medical Department of the R. A. A. S. some years ago in America, and which has been attended with most successful and indisputable results.

It is now intended to introduce the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption," in all the large centers of Europe, Asia and America, and to appoint Medical Officers and Sanitary Commissioners to coöperate, as far as possible with the Government and municipal authorities

in combating the aforesaid diseases and in all matters governing the public health.

For myself, personally, I could wish for no greater honor than the privilege of offering to my king and country the fruits of my life's study and research during my wanderings in Asia and other lands; and thus, at last, have the honor of contributing in some measure toward stamping out the national scourge—the "White Plague."

The amelioration of the suffering of my country would be ample reward for the years of my voluntary exile and the loss of all that life holds dear—*home.*

I gladly bury my personality in a public institution in order to better serve the public interest and so fulfill my obligation and duty to my King and nation.

I would, therefore, beg that Your Majesty may be pleased to favorably consider this communication and the enclosed paper on the subject of the adoption of the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption," and that Your Majesty may be pleased to have the same forwarded to the management of the "Edward VII Sanatorium for Consumptives," for their information and to invite the management to avail themselves of the advantages offered by the "Guelph Sterilization System in the treatment of Consumption."

It will afford me great pleasure to attend personally to any cases in the Edward VII. Santorium for Consumptives or other Institutions and to receive cases for treatment in the Ladbroke Nursing Homes.

I beg to point out the fact that it is not intended to disclose the details of the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption" at this time, it being the purpose of the Academy to compete for various awards offered for any discovery for the cure of cancer and for the cure of consumption.

When the merit of the Guelph Sterilization System shall have been recognized, which recognization is inevitable, the awards that may be received will be devoted to the establishment of other institutions for the benefit of the public in general and of the sick poor in particular. It should be stated that the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption" was adopted by the Academy as a result of many years of investigation and clinical experience in Europe, Asia and America, during which period hundreds of cases of cancer have been cured *without the knife, without a death, without a return of cancer and without a failure.*

The "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption" consists of a graduated system of internal and external hygienic medication, selected from the Occidental and Oriental Schools of Medicine.

The internal treatment for both cancer and consumption is comprised of vegetable compounds, the ingredients of which were selected chiefly from the ancient Sanskrit Medical authorities of India and at the present time are unobtainable in England.

The result of observation and clinical experience, covering a period of 25 years, has established

the fact that the physiological and therapeutic action of the vegetable compound renders sterile pathological germs, fungi, bacteria, tubercle, baccilli, etc.

In the pretubercle stage of consumption, the tubercle bacilli are aborted, and the disease arrested in the early stages.

In the advanced stages of tubercle, cancer, or other malignant growth, the physiological and therapeutic action of the compounds is directed to the pathological tissue, and the baccilli bacteria, cancer cells, etc., are rendered sterile and inoperative. The pathological tissue separates from the healthy tissue, and the healing process is aided by the creative action of the medicine on healthy tissue.

From the foregoing it will be observed that the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption" is specific in both the *prevention* and *cure* of cancer, consumption, catarrhal affections and other scrofulous diseases.

The external treatment by the "Guelph Sterilization" system, for the removal of cancer and other malignant growths has been rendered practically painless, and, as in the internal treatment, renders the cancerous growth sterile.

The cancer cells being drawn from the blood are absorbed by the parent cancer during the process of sterilization, with which they are rendered abortive, and in from three to five days is then lifted out bodily from its nest without inconvenience to the patient, or is allowed to slough itself off, according to the nature of the growth.

The healing process is rapid, as all cancer cells having been removed the danger of return of cancer is practically eliminated.

In conclusion I beg to enclose a copy of a paper on the adoption of the "Guelph Sterilization cure for Cancer and Consumption," from which it will be observed that the system of treatment is based on rational hygienic medication, to aid and assist nature in its remedial effort: and is opposed to surgical operation for the removal of cancer, by which operation the cancer cells are diffused through the blood, and, later manifest in *return* of *cancer*, or are forced back upon the lungs or other vital organ. The Guelph Sterilization System, it will be seen, is also opposed to inoculation of serums, anti-toxins and other measures, such as vaccination, whereby the virus of Kine-pox or other diseased germs are forced into the blood to manifest at a later date, in an aggravated form of consumption, or other scrofulous diseases.

Trusting that Your Majesty may be graciously pleased to have this matter brought to the notice of the "Edward VII Sanatorium for Consumptives" and before the health department of your Majesty's government, for the purpose of having the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption" adopted by the Sanatorium, and by Your Majesty's Government.

I beg to remain, Sire,
Your Majesty's Most Obedient Servant,
(Signed) JNO. R. GUELPH-NORMAN, M.D.,
Medical Director, R. C. A. M. C.

BUCKINGHAM PALACE.

The Private Secretary is commanded by The King to thank Dr J.R.G.Norman for his letter of the 25th inst: on the subject of the Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption which has been forwarded to the Secretary of the Cancer Research Fund.

28th September 1906.

IMPERIAL CANCER RESEARCH FUND.

Patron.
HIS MAJESTY THE KING.
President.
H.R.H. THE PRINCE OF WALES.
Vice-Presidents.
LORD LISTER. LORD STRATHCONA & MOUNT ROYAL, G.C.M.G.
RIGHT HON. A. J. BALFOUR, M.P. SIR WILLIAM BROADBENT, Bart., K.C.V.O.
SIR JULIUS WERNHER, Bart. Mr. H. L. BISCHOFFSHEIM. Mr. W. WALDORF ASTOR.
Honorary Treasurer:—Mr. HENRY MORRIS. *Secretary*:—Mr. FREDERIC G. HALLETT.
General Superintendent of Research and Director of the Central Laboratory:— Dr. E. F. BASHFORD.
Office of the Fund:—

Telephone Number—
0000 GERRARD.

EXAMINATION HALL,
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT
LONDON. W.C.

3rd. October 1906.

Sir,

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 25th. ult., and enclosed memorandum, and I have to inform you that it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance the application of secret remedies, the nature of which has not been the subject of independent investigation in our laboratories.

I have to add that a somewhat similar communication addressed by you to His Majesty the King has been forwarded to this Office.

I am, Sir,

Yours faithfully,

Frederic G. Hallett

Secretary.

J.R. Guelph Norman, Esq. M.D.

111 Ladbroke Grove,
North Kensington, W.,
21st October, 1906.

To His Majesty, the King,
Buckingham Palace.

Sire: I beg to thank Your Majesty for having caused my communication of 25th ultimo, relative to the Guelph rational system of treatment and prevention of cancer and consumption to be forwarded to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund for investigation.

It is with profound regret that I have to apprise you of the contempt in which Your Majesty's pleasure is held by a professionalism as prejudiced and bigoted as in the days when the illustrious Harvey was its victim.

I had watched with great interest and pride Your Majesty's attitude toward the amelioration of suffering; and the active measures introduced in past years, by your command, for the reduction of the terrible death roll of over five million per annum from consumption alone.

The organization of the *League of Mercy,* the *Imperial Cancer Research Fund,* the *King Edward VII Sanatorium* for consumptives, and other institutions, under Your Majesty's patronage, define not only the policy for the good of the Empire, adopted by Your Majesty as the principal feature of your reign, but a heart full of sympathy for suffering humanity—a reign to be marked by the introduction of measures for the prevention and cure of the scourge of cancer and consumption, an example deserving of the attention and *con-*

sideration of every medical man in the world; and a policy that should demand and command the support, coöperation and dutiful service of every subject in Your Majesty's Empire.

The contemptuous manner in which Your Majesty's action in the present matter was treated by the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, shows but too plainly that bigoted professional prerogative will assert itself even in the twentieth century as high-handedly as in the dark ages—no matter if the King command, or the death rate be five times five million a year.

In bringing to the notice of Your Majesty the results of some twenty-five years' research conducted in various parts of the world, I was sure of the favorable consideration shown by you, and I had hoped that Your Majesty's exalted position, if no other qualification, would command the attention of an investigation by the department or public body to which you might refer the matter.

I had been prepared by professional brethren for some opposition from organizations.

It had also been intimated to me that Your Majesty "is entirely in the hands" of the same.

In my communication addressed to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund I introduced the subject of the Guelph system for the prevention and treatment of cancer and consumption. I was aware that the rational hygienic medical system in question is opposed to much of the line of research being followed by that body. I was fully sensible of the fact that in criticizing the line of research as the line of action that will *cause* rather than

prevent and cure cancer, I was challenging the most "eminent" medical men in the world to *investigate* the Guelph System, against which bias and prejudice would be the principal and *only* witness.

After a successful clinical experience of many years by myself and the late Medical Director of the Institution which I have the honor to represent, the Rev. Geo. W. Carpender, M.D., I knew that the *only safety* to the traditional prejudice of that body was to *refuse to investigate my Guelph System.* Hence I desired to present the subject to Your Majesty, that you might insist upon *just investigation*—not that I am personally anxious for further publicity, but for the good of the nation—and of the world!

The reply of the Secretary of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, was as follows: ..... "and I am to inform you that it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance the application of secret remedies, the nature of which has not been the subject of independent investigation in our laboratories. I am to add that a somewhat similar communication addressed by you to His Majesty, the King, has been forwarded to this office.

"Yours faithfully,
(Signed) FREDERIC G. HALLETT,
"Secretary."

Here it is observed that a strong and influential body of medical men take shelter under the prestige of their King as the "patron" of the body, and of H. R. H., the Prince of Wales, as presi-

dent thereof, whose exalted position and personal feelings and intelligence they do not hesitate to ignore and insult by a curt refusal to consider or respect the vote or suggestion of their King when His Majesty's intelligence and humanity is opposed to their prejudices. Care has apparently been taken to safe-guard the professional element from the exposure of their ignorance by the official or non-official action of their "Patron," the King, or their "President," who are thereby placed in a most unenviable light before the great body of medical men of every civilized country.

So long as one of the most important medical research organizations in the country shall be permitted to ignore or refuse to "countenance" the research of independent medical men, and to dismiss an important communication forwarded to that body by Your Majesty's command, in the curt manner shown herein, so long will Your Majesty's efforts to stamp out this dread disease of cancer and consumption be in vain.

The plausible excuse presented by the Imperial Cancer Research Fund is inconsistent with the general practice, I believe, as I am of the opinion that various "secret remedies," such as serums and other proprietary preparations *are* made the "subject of independent investigation in their own laboratories."

The Guelph system is a proprietary one, and is open to the same independent investigation by *any scientific* body, under *fair* conditions.

The actual details of the process of preparation will be withheld from a prejudiced profession at

least until the matter of awards shall have been settled.

The Guelph Sanatoria will control the remedies.

In conclusion I beg to state that the Guelph Sanatoria, now being established, will arrange to treat cases of consumption and cancer in other medical institutions, the first of which are the Ladbroke Nursing Homes.

If Your Majesty will cause this matter to be brought to the notice of your Sanatorium for consumptives, and to the civil and military medical departments for investigation, the prevention and cure of cancer and consumption in Your Majesty's Empire will speedily become an accomplished fact, as has been established by absolute clinical experience elsewhere.

I am Your Majesty's
Most Obedient and Faithful Servant,
(Signed) JNO. R. GUELPH-NORMAN, M.D.
Medical Director Royal Academy of Science.

BUCKINGHAM PALACE

The Private Secretary is
Commanded to acknowledge
the receipt of Dr Normans
letter of the 21st inst.
and in enclosing the reply to
his former letter which was
returned from the Dead Letter
Office. General Post Office
is at the same time to add
that The King regrets he is
unable to do anything further
in the matter.

23 October 1906

47 Victoria Street,
Westminster,
London, S. W., 11th July, 1907.

To Imperial Cancer Research Fund,
Examination Hall,
Victoria Embankment,
London, E. C.

Gentlemen:

On the 25th of September, 1906, I addressed a letter to the Imperial Research Fund, and enclosed a memorandum on the subject of the Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption. A similar communication treating on the same subject was forwarded to your office by the command of His Majesty, the King, on or about the 26th of September.

In your reply to the above mentioned communication, under date of 3rd October, 1906, you were good enough to inform me that "it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance the application of secret remedies, the nature of which has not been the subject of independent investigation in our laboratories."

I beg to point out that in inviting the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to coöperate with the Guelph Sanatoria "in advancing the *rational medical* treatment of the diseases named (cancer and consumption), in the interest of the public health, I was fully sensible of the fact that the medical profession can not countenance the application of "secret remedies" and was careful to explain

in said communication that the Guelph System of treatment was introduced for the consideration of His Majesty, the King, and of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund as the result of many years of independent investigation and clinical experience in the treatment of cancer in the *private practice* of a *qualified* medical man, in a strictly professional and ethical manner. The successful results obtained in the treatment of several hundred cases of cancer I pointed out in my memorandum, viz, that in a practice of over forty years there were "no failures" "no deaths," and "no return of cancer" among the cases treated, the cases being kept under observation as much as possible for some years after treatment.

Under date of 3rd November, 1906, I again urged the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, "in the cause of humanity," to "at least condescend to watch cases that may be treated in the Guelph Sanatoria about to be established, even though the Fund may not see its way to make the Guelph System of treatment the subject of independent investigation in the laboratories of the Fund, as I understood has been done with other proprietary preparations in their laboratories."

No answer having been received to the above appeal, I refrained from further correspondence on the subject.

The recently published report of the General Committee of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund is, however, so misleading to the general public and more particularly so to the thousands of vic-

tims of cancer, that I am compelled to take exception to certain statements made therein.

1.—The report of the General Superintendent and the Presidential address of His Royal Highness, the Prince of Wales, state that impartial tests have been made of alleged cancer cures, and that no curative value can be attached to any of them.

2.—That so far there is "nothing to justify the hopes of a new treatment." Reference is made to full advantage being taken of *any means* that may be discovered for the alleviation of suffering, etc.

The empirical attitude of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund in presuming to brand the results of investigations conducted by private practitioners as "so-called cures," "alleged cures," etc,. and in assuming to be the central and *only* authority on the nature of and treatment for cancer—of which the Fund confesses it knows *nothing,* involves a grave responsibility.

The responsibility for the loss of many thousand lives annually from a *curable* disease, and from a *preventable* disease.

The only inference to be drawn from your report by the public is:

1.—That the Fund is the official and only authority on cancer.

2.—That physicians throughout the world who are engaged in the study of cancer submit the results of their investigations to the Fund.

3.—That nothing so far is known of the nature of or treatment for cancer.

4.—That publicity given to any treatment for this disease is to be discredited, unless it bears the "hall mark" of the Fund.

Under the above circumstances, and considering the appalling mortality from cancer and the rapid increase in the number of cases, I am once more impelled to ask the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to submit to "impartial tests" by practical clinical application to cancer in the human being, the Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption.

The Guelph System is not a "secret" remedy, but it is an ethical *proprietary* remedy of a nature such as is in regular use by the medical profession in all civilized lands. The only protection asked for is the protection of "proprietary rights," as is usual in such cases.

The investigation asked for and required for this *established* system of treatment in the *prevention cure* of cancer is the practical application of the remedy to cancer in the human being, in which cases the results are irrefutable—a cure in every case.

Yours faithfully,
(Signed) Jno. R. Guelph-Norman, M.D.,
Medical Director, Guelph Sanatoria.
Ladbroke Nursing Home,

111 Ladbroke Grove, W.
3rd November, 1906.

To the Imperial Cancer Research Fund,
Examination Hall,
Victoria Embankment.

Gentlemen:

In further reference to my letter of 25th September, and enclosed memorandum, on the subject of the "Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer and Consumption," I have the honor to state that since the receipt of your reply thereto, I have received the thanks of His Majesty, the King, for having introduced the Guelph rational system for the prevention and cure of cancer and consumption. I have also been advised that the communication addressed by me to the King had been forwarded, by His Majesty's command, to the Secretary of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund.

It was, therefore, a matter of surprise and regret to me that a communication of such vital importance to the public health and in the saving of life referred to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund by His Majesty, the King, who is also patron of the Fund, should have been dismissed by the Fund without any attempt whatever to investigate its merits.

I find, from your letter of 3rd ultimo, that I have been laboring under a grave misapprehension as to the purpose for which the Fund was formed, and I believe that His Majesty, the King, patron of the Fund, H.R.H., the Prince of Wales, President of the Fund, and other influential supporters

of the Fund are victims of the same misunderstanding.

That His Majesty, the King, as patron of the Fund, should have been graciously pleased to have caused the attention of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to be called to the Guelph rational system for the prevention and cure of cancer and consumption, in the interest of His Majesty's people, knowing that it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance such applications, or the researches of independent medical men, and that neither the King's pleasure, his exalted rank, nor his official and personal connection with the Fund would be respected or considered in a matter of such moment, shows on one hand, His Majesty's great interest in and sympathy for his people, in that he was willing to risk the reproof of the conservative professional element dominating the Fund under His Majesty's patronage.

On the other hand, which, I think, is apparent, His Majesty was under the impression that the Fund was formed and is supported by public subscription, for the purpose of liberal and unprejudiced investigation and research into the nature of and treatment for cancer.

Second, that said investigations would not be limited to the researches, experiments and experience of the few medical men who are members of the Fund, but that the *results* of the researches of any medical man, or other person, in the furtherance of the objects of the Fund, would be entitled to courteous consideration, and, if the

same gave evidence of any apparent value, should be made "the subject of independent investigation in the laboratories of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund."

I would state that from inquiries I believe that the above opinion is that of the general public.

The attitude of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund in having ignored the King's desire to establish the merit of the Guelph system for the prevention and cure for cancer and consumption, without so much as making it a matter for the independent investigation in your own laboratories, is the more remarkable when the statement of the General Superintendent of Research and Director of the Central Laboratory in his fourth annual report before the Executive Committee of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, is considered.

He there states that attention had been given to the examination of various so-called "cancer cures," which had appeared from time to time in the public press.

The action of the General Superintendent of Research in examining into the merits of what he styles "so-called cancer cures," and refusing to investigate the *bonafide* results of the researches of independent medical men when the same are presented through the regular course by the discoverer, and subsequently sent to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund by His Majesty, the King, and Patron of the Fund, is, to my mind, incomprehensible.

I beg to state that I brought this subject to the notice of His Majesty, the King, and sought the

coöperation of the Imperial Research Fund, with a view to the speedy reduction of the enormous death rate from consumption (five millions per annum) and the present rapidly increasing mortality from cancer.

The interest shown by His Majesty, the King, both in his letter of thanks to myself and in commanding that the subject of the Guelph System of cure for the above diseases should be brought to the notice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund is most commendable, and characteristic of his superior intelligence and judgment, and sympathy for his people.

The attitude of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, on the other hand, is most regrettable.

In conclusion I would state for the information of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, that in addition to the reception of cases of cancer and consumption in the Ladbroke Nursing Homes in London and at Southend-on-Sea, for treatment by the Guelph System, it is intended to establish, as rapidly as possible, institutions at various centers throughout the United Kingdom, the continent of Europe, Canada, the United States of America, Asia and Australasia for the introduction of this treatment (the necessary funds for which will be furnished by a physician who comes of a family many members of which have died from cancer, and who, himself, was cured of cancer six years ago—having had a cancer removed from the neck by the Guelph Sterilization Cure for Cancer, without a *return* of the disease. It may be here mentioned that the hereditary disease

in the family of the medical man in question invariably shows itself in the neck and throat.)

I trust that in the cause of humanity, the Imperial Cancer Research Fund will at least condescend to watch cases treated in the Guelph Sanatoria about to be established, even though the Fund may not see its way to make the Guelph System of treatment the subject of independent investigation in the laboratories of the Fund, as I understand from the Superintendent's report, already quoted, has been done with other proprietary preparations in their laboratories.

I feel it my duty to state in the interest of the medical profession and the public health that from my experience and researches throughout the world during the past quarter of a century, and from the successful clinical results of my practice and the results of the practice during the past forty years of my colleague and partner, the late Rev. Geo. W. Carpender, M.D. (Ann Arbor, Michigan, '53)—the noted specialist for cancer—a more general knowledge of the Guelph System throughout the British Empire will mark His Majesty's reign by the *conquest* of the *scourge of* the *earth*—cancer and consumption. On the other hand the lack of coöperation or a manifestation of primitive professional jealousies and prejudices may prolong, for a brief season only, the sacrifice of human lives.

Then, as in the case of the late Emperor Frederick of Germany and Sir Morell Mackenzie and his persecutors, the awakening will come, and the present system of human sacrifice to tradi-

tional and conservative medical bigotry will be a thing of the past, and, as in all history, the opponents to rational and intelligent progress will be buried in oblivion.

Yours faithfully,
(Signed) JNO. R. GUELPH-NORMAN, M.D.,
Medical Director, Guelph Sanatoria.

IMPERIAL CANCER RESEARCH FUND.

Patron.
HIS MAJESTY THE KING.
President.
H.R.H. THE PRINCE OF WALES.
Vice-Presidents.
LORD LISTER. LORD STRATHCONA & MOUNT ROYAL, G.C.M.G.
RIGHT HON. A. J. BALFOUR, M.P. SIR WILLIAM BROADBENT, Bart., K.C.V.O.
SIR JULIUS WERNHER, Bart. MR. H. L. BISCHOFFSHEIM. MR. W. WALDORF ASTOR.
Honorary Treasurer:—MR. HENRY MORRIS. *Secretary*:—MR. FREDERIC G. HALLETT.
General Superintendent of Research and Director of the Central Laboratory:— DR. E. F. BASHFORD.

Telephone Number—
8000 GERRARD.
Telegraphic Address—
BASHFORD,
49 CONJOINT,
LONDON.

Office of the Fund:—
EXAMINATION HALL,
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT,
LONDON, W.C.

July 15th., 1907.

Sir,

With reference to your letter of the 11th. inst., I have again perused your previous communications and the memorandum accompanying them, and I beg to inform you that I am unable to take any action in regard to the matter to which you draw attention.

I am, Sir,
Yours faithfully,

J.R. Guelph-Norman Esq., M.D.

GUELPH CURES FOR CANCER AND CONSUMPTION.

1st January, 1908.

His Majesty, King Edward VII.,
Sandringham House,
Sandringham.

Sire: Permit me to wish Your Majesty a Happy New Year. I pray Almighty God that the New Year may witness the realization of the two great objects which have characterized Your Majesty's reign as that nearest approaching the Divine Constitution of the King of Kings, viz:

The establishment of the reign of the (moral) law, by the adoption of an International Constitution of the United Nations of Earth, to the Glory of God and the Salvation of men, and—

To confirm the last two paragraphs of my telegraphic message of Christmas Day to Your Majesty, which read as follows:

"It is my privilege to announce at this season that Your Majesty's untiring efforts to stamp out the national scourges of Cancer and Consumption are about to be crowned with success through the successful results of extensive research of Messrs. Carpender and Guelph. The systems for the Prevention and Cure of these diseases is my Christmas offering to my King and Country. I pray Your Majesty's acceptance thereof, for the good of the Empire."

Supplementing the foregoing telegraphic communication of my offer as a Christmas gift, through Your Majesty, to the British Empire, of the said systems of medical treatment, viz:

1. The Guelph System for the prevention and cure of Consumption and other forms of tuberculosis.

2. The Guelph System for the prevention and cure of cancer and other abnormal growths. * * *

Unfortunately for suffering humanity, the same traditional prejudice of the medical profession which prevailed fifty years ago still stalks through the ranks of the profession, and not less than *one hundred million* lives have been sacrificed on the altar of Conservative Professionalism from Cancer alone since the father of the rational cure for Cancer (Dr. Geo. W. Carpender) first demonstrated that this dread disease can be both prevented and cured, and gave his discoveries to the world, only to be discredited and assailed by those who were not worthy to lace his boots.

In the introduction of remedial agents for such diseases, I fully recognize the importance of due investigation before adoption of the same, but when the results of years of research by an eminent physician, and the incontestable results of clinical tests are condemned by those who sit in the seat of the scornful, *without any investigation whatever,* while five million lives are annually sacrificed from consumption, and about the same number from cancer, while the doctor and physician stand by the bedside of the victims, and say, "No, don't try that, the patient must die," what can he say, who *knows* that such victims *can* be saved by rational medical treatment, if only the same is adopted before the vitality has been completely exhausted. He can only look upon those

whose prejudice and bias condemn the untold millions to death, and say: "*You are the greatest enemies of the human race—you are responsible for more murders than have been committed by all other murderers from Cain to the present day—you have sacrificed more lives on the altar of ignorance and bigotry than have been slain in battles in the history of the world—you are the greatest hindrance to the progress of science and to the legitimate demands of suffering humanity.*"

Commencing about fifty years ago, the Rev. George W. Carpender M.D. (Ann Arbor, Mich., '53), published the results of his researches and early clinical experience in the treatment of cancer. He also demonstrated his system for many years by means of lectures before various medical colleges and medical associations. The incredulity, bias, and prejudice with which his statements and clinical reports were received by the profession did not, be it said to their honor, prevent medical men from sending their cancer cases from different parts of the country to this eminent and fearless specialist. Of all the cases *taken up* and *treated* by him, *not one* was lost!

The practitioners who sent the cases and watched the treatment, admitted the cures, but they invariably changed their ground by stating that they and others who had diagnosed the cases as cancer, including, of course, the most eminent specialists, *were clearly in error,* as shown by the cure—as *cancer,* an "*incurable disease,*" *could not be cured.* Hence, it is that there was not found a case of cancer in the land; and, according to the

"wise ones," the uselessness of "*cancer research,*" in so far at least as the idea of finding a *cure* for an "*incurable*" disease is concerned, and cancer research, according to this "professional" opinion, a most ridiculous farce.

For some years prior to my entering into partnership with Dr. George W. Carpender in 1899, my colleague had discontinued to publish in the medical journals the results of his later, and improved, methods of treatment. His reason for so doing being chiefly on account of the fact that while the members of the medical profession refused to *admit* the truth of what they beheld with their own eyes (as in the case of the contemporaries, over forty years of age, of the illustrious Harvey), the unqualified quack, taking advantage of the indisputable results of Dr. Carpender's treatment of cancer and the published formulæ on the one hand, and the professional prejudice and bigotry on the other, entered the field and reaped a rich harvest, and, incidentally, brought the great discoveries of one of the greatest physicians that ever lived, into greater disrepute.

Without elaborating further upon the now perfected systems of treatment herein referred to, I can not but feel that the unceasing practical interest which you have taken in the subject of cancer and consumption for so many years, both as Prince and King, for the saving of life and for the alleviation of the suffering of so many millions of Your Majesty's subjects, will enforce the claim of Your Majesty's commands respecting the proper investigation of the system of treatment

for the diseases specified herein, a brief history of which I have prepared for submission to Your Majesty. * * *

It will afford me great pleasure to depute William Pitt Carpender, M.D. (Ann Arbor, Mich.), and Frank Blair Humphreys, M.D. (Ann Arbor, Mich.), nephews of my colleague, Dr. George W. Carpender, or other practitioners, to *meet any Commission that Your Majesty may be graciously pleased to appoint in the interests of the public health and the advancement of science, to demonstrate before such Commission the merit of the various lines of preventive and curative treatment comprising the Guelph Systems for the Prevention and Cure of Cancer and Consumption, according to the various stages of development of the respective diseases in different cases.*

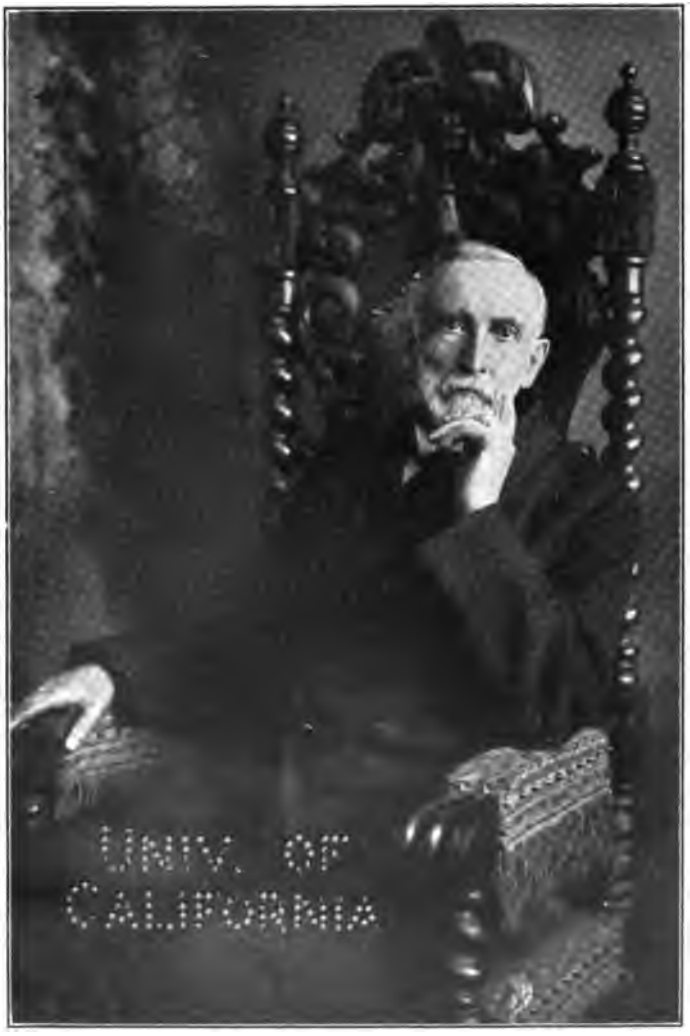
When the value of the Guelph Systems shall have been thus satisfactorily reported upon by Your Majesty's Commission, and my offer formally accepted by Your Majesty on behalf of Your Majesty's Empire, the full formula and other particulars governing the treatment of the respective diseases will be formally handed over to Your Majesty or to such authority as you may be graciously pleased to empower to receive the same.

Awaiting Your Majesty's most gracious permission to submit the Report herein referred to for Your Majesty's personal inspection,

I beg to remain, Sire,

Your Majesty's Most Obedient Servant,

JOHN R. GUELPH, M.D.



THE LATE REVEREND GEORGE W. CARPENDER, M. D.

The celebrated specialist of Chicago. Father of the rational medical treatment of cancer. For some years a colleague of Prince John De Guelph

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

PRINCE OF WALES AND CANCER RESEARCH—IMPORTANT WARNING AGAINST MISLEADING STATEMENTS—PUBLIC HEALTH SACRIFICED TO PROFESSIONAL PREJUDICE.

In the published report of the sixth meeting of the General Committee of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, held at Marlborough House, under the presidency of His Royal Highness, the Prince of Wales, in July, 1907, certain statements are presented to the public as being official, authoritative and absolute on the present knowledge of cancer; of its nature, cause and cure of which *the public is assured, nothing is yet known.*

The grave responsibility incurred by members of the Royal family in consenting to act as the mouthpieces of a professional body, such as the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, is amply illustrated in the presidential address of the Prince of Wales at the meeting.

In expressing the satisfaction of the General Committee at the "growing confidence of the public in the work of the fund," as shown "from the endeavors which are now being made in France, Belgium, Scandinavia and the United States to organize similar investigations," and last, but not least, by the munificent donation of £40,000 from Mr. and Mrs. Bischoffsheim, the Prince said, "the *broad* lines of inquiry undertaken by the Imperial Cancer Research Fund have, we feel, influenced the whole nature of investigation at home and abroad." And again, "It is recognized that the work is conceived and carried out in a *liberal*

spirit; that whatever facts are ascertained (for or against the curative value of 'alleged' cures) are immediately made known to every one; that our material is freely placed at the disposal of all who are qualified to use it to good advantage; that our staff is not working for its own ends, but with a *whole-hearted* desire to help on a solution of the problem."

"Although many new facts have been ascertained, *they do not as yet justify hopes of a new treatment.*" "It is hoped, therefore, that the public will continue by its sympathy and financial assistance to support the work of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, and be willing to exercise the patience necessary for the prolonged and systematic investigation."

"The fact that alleged cures are being submitted to impartial tests, such as the report shows to have been done in the case of trypsin, will, I hope, assure the public that *everything will be done to take full advantage of any means* that may be discovered to *alleviate suffering.*"

The above excerpts speak for themselves (the italics are mine), "broad lines;" "liberal spirit;" "alleged cures" submitted to "impartial tests," "facts immediately made known;" "alleged cures" condemned, "no curative value" could be attached to any of those which *had been tested;* no hope yet for a new treatment, and the public is expected, of course, to accept this as authoritative, final.

Be patient, suffer and die by tens of thousands, we are the Imperial authority—wait till we have

concluded our experiments in breeding cancerous *mice.*

The tenor of the addresses and of the General Superintendent's report is that of Imperialism. The whole world takes its cue from the Fund; and, rightly or wrongly, the public must accept the ruling of that august body.

To the interested public, the line of research followed by the Fund is anything but "broad," "liberal" and "impartial." The report of the General Superintendent for 1906 stated as follows:

"The advance in our knowledge now enables us to reproduce at will all the features of spontaneous cancer in mice, and to protect healthy mice from all the consequences of inoculating them with experimental cancer. This having been achieved, it is not too much to hope that the further development of the experimental study of cancer will ultimately yield results having a direct bearing on the nature and treatment of cancer." This year the same fad is being closely followed. "By removing tumors surgically, mice had been got to breed, and by successively crossing them with other mice naturally suffering from cancer, any hereditary tendency which might exist was being concentrated. In the course of a few years (?) the vexed question of hereditary would, therefore, be settled one way or the other."

It would seem that experimental inoculation of cancer in *mice* to produce cancer; to remove tumor surgically in mice; to breed by scientifically crossing cancerous mice to prove or disprove the hereditary nature of cancer (in mice), has been

the hobby for some years, and is expected to be so for at least "a few years" to come.

In the meantime *forty thousand people are dying in England annually* from this dread disease, and the public is assured in all seriousness that the Fund is examining all so-called or "alleged" cures brought before it and that every advantage is taken of any means that may possibly alleviate suffering. The only thing the public is asked to do is to support the work financially and to wait —or die—patiently; try nothing to save life, *because* the General Superintendent has subjected every "alleged" cure to impartial tests and declares that there is nothing of any curative value —awful responsibility.

On the 25th of September, 1906, the writer addressed a letter to His Majesty, the King, Patron of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, relative to a specific treatment for the *prevention* and *cure* of *Cancer* and *Consumption*. A memorandum was enclosed giving some particulars of the treatment; and His Majesty was asked in the name of humanity to cause the system to be made the subject of investigation, *i.e.*, submitted for "impartial tests."

I am happy to be able to state that His Majesty at once recognized the importance of the subject, and commanded that the paper be forwarded to the Secretary of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, and conveyed his thanks to the originator of the Guelph system.

On the same date, 25th September, a similar

letter was addressed by the writer to the Imperial Cancer Research Fund.

The following is a copy of the reply:

Examination Hall,
Victoria Embankment,
London, W. C., 3rd October, 1906.

"Sir, I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of 25th ult. and enclosed memorandum and I am to inform you that it is contrary to the practice of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund to countenance the application of secret remedies, the nature of which has not been made the subject of independent investigation in our laboratories.

"I have to add that a somewhat similar communication addressed by you to His Majesty, the King, has been forwarded to this office. I am, Sir, Yours faithfully,

"FREDERIC G. HALLETT, Secretary.

Thus the authority, pleasure and interest of His Majesty, the King and the Patron of the Fund, was ignored, and the last paragraph of the above letter fully expresses the contempt in which His Majesty's opinion is held by the "Committee."

I am now waiting funds to establish Sanatoria for the treatment of these diseases and will publish the full report and correspondence on the subject and also challenge the *Medical* members of the Fund, who, sheltering themselves under the influence of the royal patron, and other royal and in-

fluential supporters; deliberately turn down a system of cure of the disease for the discovery of which is the sole purpose for which the Fund was established. Considering that the system spoken of here also applies to the prevention and treatment of consumption, from which disease one million deaths occur annually in Europe, sixty thousand being contributed by England, and possibly over two million in the British Empire, and that more deaths result from cancer than from all the following diseases—smallpox, diphtheria, typhoid fever, scarlet fever, measles and whooping-cough, and the terrible responsibility resting on the shoulders of the *Official* of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund, who refused to investigate a system, even at the suggestion or command of His Majesty, the King, and then hoodwinked the public by saying that "alleged" cures are impartially tested, is one that calls for investigation.

The Guelph system is not an "alleged" cure, but, as previously stated, an established "fact," which, according to the Prince of Wales, should be "immediately made known to everybody," that some of the 5,000,000 lives lost annually from consumption, and some of the millions dying from cancer might be saved and the disease prevented.

(Signed) JNO. R. GUELPH.

THE INCORPORATED MEDICAL PRACTITIONERS ASSOCIATION.
OFFICIAL SOLICITOR — ARTHUR J. HILLS.

BURGESS, COSENS & Co
SOLICITORS.
H. BURGESS.
G. COSENS.
A. COSENS.
A. J. HILLS.
TELEGRAMS.
"MUNICEPS, LONDON"

Suffolk House,
5 Laurence Pountney Hill,
Cannon Street.
London, E.C. 25th Octr 1906

Dr Guelph-Norman,
111. Ladbroke Grove,
W.

Dear Sir,

I have seen the Secretary of the Incorporated Medical Practitioners Assn, and have arranged with him the manner in which your Cancer and Consumption cures shall be brought to the notice of the Council, and roughly speaking I have put it to them in this way, that you will give the members of the association the opportunity of sending patients, on terms, to undergo your cures at your homes, and that, in the hereafter, when your cures have been pronounced to be what you claim they are, you will make known to the Medical profession the exact formula or nature of cure and that, in consideration of their sending you now, that disclosure shall be made in the first instance to their Council by means of a lecture given by you.

Yours truly,

Arthur J. Hills

I Enclose you name & Address please and Bill & Cheque Names, Dates &

A.J.H

BURGESS, COSENS & CO
SOLICITORS.
H. BURGESS.
G. COSENS.
A. COSENS.
A. J. MILLS.
TELEGRAMS,
"BURGESS, LONDON."

Suffolk House,
5 Laurence Pountney Hill,
Cannon Street.
London, E.C. Nov 10th 1916

Dr Guelph Norman,
7. Coldervale Road,
Clapham Park,
S.W.

Dear Doctor,

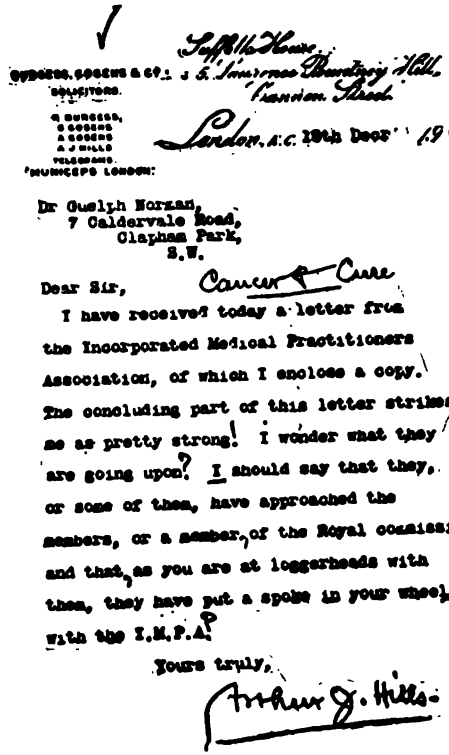
"Amritam" is before some likely people, and I am waiting their decisions. I am almost as impatient in the matter as you must feel, but it would be fatal to show it.

Guelph. Sterilisation cure.

This I have set out most fully and in detail for the council of the Incorporated Medical Practitioners Association, but I have not heard any report upon it so far. I have also taken steps to make it known that you would be prepared to accept a partner, and would prefer a physician in the establishment of your homes, but that you are not prepared to take any person, it must be a persona grata.

Yours truly,

William G. Mills



Dr Guelph Norman,
7 Caldervale Road,
Clapham Park,
S.W.

Dear Sir, Cancer Cure

I have received today a letter from the Incorporated Medical Practitioners Association, of which I enclose a copy. The concluding part of this letter strikes me as pretty strong! I wonder what they are going upon? I should say that they, or some of them, have approached the members, or a member, of the Royal commission, and that, as you are at loggerheads with them, they have put a spoke in your wheel, with the I.M.P.A.?

Yours truly,

Arthur J. Hills.

THE INCORPORATED MEDICAL PRACTITIONERS' ASS'N

Moorgate Station Chambers,
London, E. C., 17th December, 1906.

A. J. Hills, Esq.,
5 Laurence Pountney Hill,
Cannon Street, E. C.

GUELPH-NORMAN TREATMENT.

Dear Sir:

At the Meeting of the Council held in November, it was resolved that your letters on this mat-

ter shall be given to the President, who should go through them and report to the next Meeting of the Council. That Meeting was held last Thursday, the 13th inst., and there was a general discussion on the matter after the President had given his views, and it was resolved that I should write and thank you for the trouble you have taken in the matter, and for your endeavor to benefit the members of this Association, but to advise you that the Council can only consider it in the nature of a quack remedy, and that, therefore, they cannot be connected with it in any way.

Yours truly,

(Signed) JOHN SELL COTMAN.

---

7 Caldervale Road,
Clapham Park, S. W.
19 December, 1906.

I.M.P.A. AND THE GUELPH TREATMENT.

Major A. J. Hills.

My Dear Sir:

Your favor of yesterday with copy of a letter from the I.M.P.A., reporting the action taken by that august body on the Guelph Sterilization System for the prevention and cure of cancer and consumption was duly received.

Pray accept my thanks for having brought this important matter to the notice of the Incorporated Medical Practitioners' Association. In having so caused this representative body of British physicians to record the resolution adopted at the meet-

ing of the Council on Thursday, 13th inst., you have, in my opinion, done the public a service.

The concluding part is, as you remark, "pretty strong," but withal, perfectly natural—it was ever so, "quack, quack, quack!" Medical history is full of the familiar cry. All that is deserving of any consideration in the realm of medicine has been forced upon the medical world, and for the saving of life, to the accompaniment of the professional chorus—"quack! quack!! quack!!!"

The report of the I.M.P.A. on the conquest of cancer by the Guelph System will be most carefully preserved as the richest, if not the most highly prized, of the records of the Institution. In justice to the medical profession, and for due protection of the public health and general interest the unqualified verdict of the I.M.P.A. against a system of treatment without even a pretense to investigate the merits of the same, shall be duly recorded by or through the official organ, when the same shall be published, in a column facing the clinical reports on results of the *practical application* of the system.

My letter of last evening explains the position of the system. The attitude of the institution must be aggressive pioneer effort in combating the scourge of the earth—(cancer and consumption)—and its greatest ally, the "Quack! quack!! quack!!! element of the medical profession.

A year from now the Guelph medical will be held in as high esteem as is the Guelph political to-day.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) JNO. R. GUELPH.

Duncan, Gosens & Co
Solicitors.

R. Duncan
A. Gosens
A. Gosens.
A. J. Hills.
Telegrams,
"Municeps, London."

Suffolk House,
1 Laurence Pountney Hill,
Cannon Street,
London, E.C. 19th Dec. 1902.

Dr Guelph Norman,
7 Caldervale Road,
Clapham Park,
S.W.

Dear Doctor,

Sanatoria.

Your plan and challenge ought to make them sit up! I am rather disgusted, I must say, with what appears to me, as an outsider, as being little and narrow minded. If your cure be worthless, the Doctors did not stand to suffer by it, in any way, neither would you have gained. If it be valuable, then for a silly rad they are simply flouting it, to their own detriment.

Yours truly,

Arthur J. Hills

THE LORD MAYOR'S CRIPPLES FUND.

THE MANSION HOUSE,
LONDON, E.C.
Decr. 6th., 1906.

J. Guelph Norman Esq., M.D.,
7, Calderwale Road,
Clapham Park, S.W.

Dear Sir,

Thank you very much for your letter, which I have read with interest.

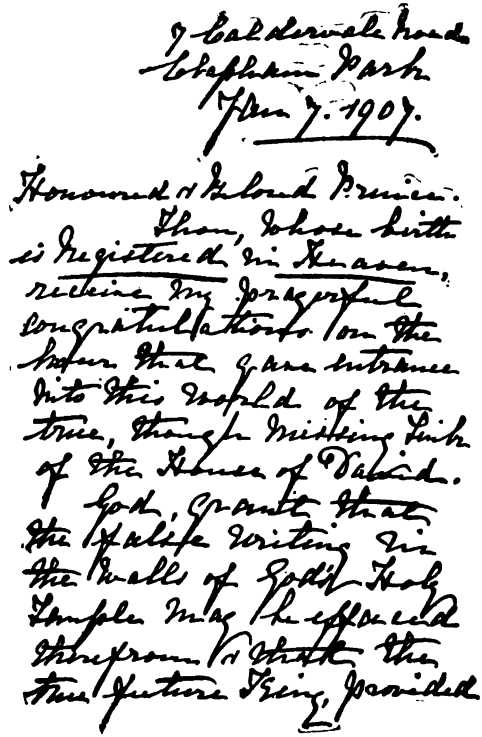
I think you will understand that for the next few months my chief work will be the collection of the necessary funds for my Cripples Scheme. As soon as I have got the money I shall proceed with the work for which it is being collected, and I shall then be very glad of the benefit of your counsel and advice.

Perhaps in the Spring of the New Year you will be good enough to write me again, and I will endeavour to arrange an appointment.

Believe me,
Yours very truly,
W. Treloar
Lord Mayor.

The following is the copy of a letter from a gentleman of prominence who went from England to see Prince John De Guelph. It furnishes an idea of what the attitude of the British public will be

when the wrongs inflicted upon the Prince John and his royal mother are fully comprehended:



by God, that one day
he exalted to England's
throne in the hearts of
the people, whom then
shall he baptized by a
holy & just God in the
delights of the Heavenly-life.
May God hear my
prayer & that there may not
pestilence pierce the bloods
of His Kingdom, that
the joy-bells of earth
may ring in our
Sweden Prince from
his long dreary life in
foreign lands to the
hearts of his father's
people.

Thus pray the loving
heart & devoted subject
of England's
Motherhood
In Hillhouse

STORY OF QUEEN VICTORIA AND PRINCE ALBERT'S NEGOTIATIONS WITH THE DANISH COURT.

When in San Francisco I one day made the acquaintance of a pretty little woman, a Mrs. Mae Ogden, wife of a member of the police force of that city.

I took an artistic interest in this lady's voice and consequently she was for a time almost in daily touch with me. One day while she was singing for me the Prince came home (he was then in business with my father), and I begged him to come in that he might give his opinion of my newly discovered "song-bird."

After he had listened to her and manifested his pleasure and expressed his good wishes for her future, he retired and we took up our private conversation again.

Mrs. Ogden then turned to me and said, "What did you say the gentleman's name was?"

"Mr. Guelph," I replied.

"Guelph," said Mrs. Ogden, that is the name of the Royal family of England. I did not know there were any others by that name."

"I believe there are not," I again replied.

"Why then —— how do you make that out?" she said, deeply interested.

"I mean that his intimate friends know him as a Prince, he belongs to the Royal family of England and is the legitimate issue of King Edward VII and his first Princess-Consort. It is pretty generally known that King Edward married a beautiful Irish belle, who was a descendant of one

of the proudest, most ancient and noblest Houses of the United Kingdom, whose ancestral seat was in Ireland. The lady was said to be the most beautiful in the four kingdoms."

As I spoke her face flushed crimson and then paled as though she were more than ordinarily interested and she finally stopped my remarks by saying—

"Oh, I believe I know all about it—isn't this the most extraordinary meeting in the world? Why, my mother and father have entertained my brothers and sisters and myself through our childhood with the story of the Prince of Wales' first love, the unhappy bride, and the unfortunate little Prince," she stopped and thought a second or two and said, "His name is John, is it not?"

"It is," I replied. "How do you know that it is?"

"Because that was the name of the poor little Prince who was to be put away from his mother among strangers that he might grow up among the people and away from the influence of the court."

"My father," she continued, "took charge of the Royal hunting farm and both my parents were Royalty's trusted servants. When the marriage of Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, with Princess Alexandra was first talked of, Queen Victoria, Prince-Consort, Prince Christian (he was not yet King), and the Princess Louise of Denmark retired to the hunting farm for the conference upon that matter and my parents were in and out of the room in attendance upon their

Majesties all during that conference. The matter of this meeting had been kept quite a secret. My parents have told us often how the two Royal husbands advised Queen Victoria and Princess Louise of Denmark afterwards Queen Louise), that under the circumstances it would be a dangerous experiment to form any new alliance for the Prince of Wales and more especially on account of the high rank of the Prince's young and beautiful bride, and also because there was issue and that issue a Prince. The Prince-Consort also warned Queen Victoria that she must remember that in Edward they had no such unfaithful and vacillating Prince as was George IV and that he had warned them, in fact had sworn that if they insisted in thus separating him from the wife of his choice, whom he considered quite qualified in rank and in every way fitted to be the future Queen of England, that, if his first marriage, his bride or the issue, the little Prince John, ever faced him or claimed their first right, *he would never disown them.* The Prince Christian said that there was no doubt but that, as the first marriage had been duly performed in the regular way, the issue would become a serious obstacle to the heirs of Alexandra and he seriously advised Queen Victoria to permit the first marriage to stand. The Prince-Consort also stated that if the English people ever came to know the truth of the matter and the manner in which Queen Victoria meant to hush it up and to put away the Prince, that the people would rise up in righteous indignation at such proceedings wihch might actually form the basis for serious

trouble and revolution, more especially as the British people were very religious as a whole and most particular on the marriage question. That this in fact was the trend of the argument and it was because Queen Victoria did have misgivings on this subject that she kept the bride in Windsor Castle until after the birth of the Prince John that she might take care of and keep all the evidence as nearly as possible in her own hands; that she had engaged nurses from her own county and whom she felt certain she could trust; that the bride was afterwards turned away with a broken heart bereft of her husband and her little son."

So, she said, the story went and that all Denmark knew of it before Alexandra's marriage.

I saw Mrs. Ogden a few days after the earthquake. She was well, but her parents were both in very bad health as a consequence of the shock and terror they had experienced. Whether they are now living I do not know, but the daughter was living and well a year ago, as I had a very nice letter from her.

Since I came to Brooklyn I met a Miss Jacobs, from Denmark, and she said she had often heard of King Edward's first marriage and that it was well known and was common talk in Copenhagen at that time and that the people had no sympathy with their methods of doing the first wife and the little Prince John out of their rightful inheritance in that wholesale manner. They were pleased at the honor paid to their Danish Princess, but did not approve of ignoring a marriage that was a

sacrament, and legal contract in the eyes of Church and State.

ANNE ELIZABETH, Princess De Guelph.

18th August, 1910.

EMPIRE REFORM LEAGUE.

The Empire Reform League is established to secure the abrogation of certain laws enacted in the Middle Ages and at later periods which are inapplicable in the twentieth century in that the provisions of said Acts are contrary to the principle of religious liberty, are arbitrary, oppressive, and unjust. The said Acts have been productive of gross injustice, poverty, distress, and wanton sacrifice of life; the said Acts are responsible for the long-continued oppression in Ireland, the wholesale evictions and unjust executions; for the increasing frequency of famine and pestilence in India; for the excessive taxation of the people and the unhealthy economic conditions throughout the Empire and the consequent political unrest, jeopardizing the peace of the world.

Lastly, the said barbarous Acts are responsible for the infamous custom of Royal polygamy in the Reigning House, for the discarding of the rightful Queen and the disfranchisement of the eldest legitimate son and heir, the King-Emperor de jure.

The following are a few of the Acts to be repealed, the same being prejudicial to the peace of

the world, repugnant to the tenets of the Christian religion, and revolting to the moral sentiment of the civilized world:

1. To repeal the *Act of Union*—A just and necessary measure looking to the emancipation of Ireland, and to the development of closer friendly relations between the parties thereto than is possible under the said distasteful *Act of Union.*

2. To repeal the barbarous *Act of William and Mary* (the Bill of Rights.) The said Act being inapplicable in the present age of civilization in that it is contrary to all principles of religious liberty and to the moral sentiments of all civilized nations.

3. To repeal the Act 34, Edward III, passed at a Parliament held at Westminster on the Sunday next before the Feast of the Conversion of St. Paul A. D., 1360-61, obsolete in Great Britain, but still applied in Ireland. The said Act has been responsible for gross injustice in that long-suffering country, in that it dispenses with:

a. The production, as accuser, of any person threatened or injured by the accused.
b. The right of an accused person to a trial by jury, and
c. To institute those proceedings before the Court of King's Bench, from which decision there could be no appeal.

4. To annul and abrogate the 12 George III C. II. of 1772, the so-called Royal Marriage Act, which is a violation of the Laws of both Church

and State, and of the Canonical and Civil disabilities by which marriages of Kings, Princes, and peasants alike are regulated in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland; and which said so-called Act has from the date of its enactment been recognized as unconstitutional and inoperative and therefore obsolete, until the year 1860, when the late Queen Victoria resorted to it to satisfy her autocratic whims in controlling royal marriages in the Reigning House, a weakness for which Her Majesty was most noted.

The Empire Reform League will secure the enactment of legitimate measures to provide for political and economic reform and the more efficient administration of all matters tending to the advancement of national prosperity and permanent good of the people, with special reference to the development of the natural resources, manufacturing, agricultural and other industries of Ireland and in India, for the amelioration of the condition of long-continued adversity and suffering in those countries, and for the promotion of more friendly relations between Great Britain and Ireland and America, and the development of international commerce on lines of equity and justice, looking to the establishment of international peace.

The case of the Prince John of Great Britain and Ireland, domiciled in the United States and known as Prince John de Guelph, the eldest legitimate son and heir-at-law of His late Majesty, King Edward VII, is supported by The Empire Reform League.

CAMPAIGN.

The Empire Reform League will conduct an active political campaign throughout the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and the British Empire, and through the United States of America, by means of public lectures, through the public press, and through its literary organs.

Councils and branches of The Empire Reform League will be established in all large cities and towns, and the reforms herein referred to and other legislative measures that may be adopted by The Empire Reform League will be brought before the Imperial Parliament in the regular manner and carried to a successful issue.

Ladies and Gentlemen in sympathy with the objects of The Empire Reform League are cordially invited to send in their applications for membership.

(Signed) JOHN S. LEWIS,
Secretary.

95 Cliff Street, New York City.

GUELPH

EDITOR'S NOTE

A GENEALOGICAL SKETCH

A.D. 1000:—Oldest known ancestor, Hugo, Marquis of Este, a district in the province of Padua, Italy.

Year 1055:—Albert Azon II, Marquis of Este, acquired by his marriage with Kunigunde, daughter of Guelph II, Count of Altdorf, in Wurtemberg, the domains of that house, and became a recognized Prince of the Holy Roman Empire of German nationality. This original German seat of the Guelphs in Germany is now known as Weingarten, and has a famous abbey founded by the Guelphs.

From 1070 to 1138, and from 1156 to 1180, the Guelphs of Este-Altdorf reigned as Dukes in Bavaria.

On or about the fourth decade of the twelfth century, the Guelphs acquired by heritage the fief of Nordheim-Supplingenburg, their kinsman Henry of Orgueilleux marrying Gertrude, daughter of the last Count of Supplingenburg, this Countship being an enclave in the Duchy of Brunswick.

About the same time the Guelph Henry the Black, Duke of Bavaria, acquired the right of succession in the Countship of Billin by his marriage to a daughter of the last Count, Magnus.

From 1137 to 1138, and from 1142 to 1180, the Guelphs reigned as Dukes in Saxony.

In 1811, as successors to the ancient Saxe Dukes, they acquired the Stewardship in Brunswick and Luneburg, ranking as German Duchies.

On August 8, 1235, a Guelph assumed the style and title of Duke of Brunswick.

In the year 1520, the Guelphs added to their titles that of Duke of Celle.

In the year 1569 they assumed the government of Luneburg.

March 28, 1660:—Birth of George, son of Elector Ernest Augustus of Hanover, who, on August 1, 1714, became King of Great Britain and Ireland as George I.

On March 22, 1692, the head of the House of Guelph assumed the style and title of Prince-Elector of Hanover. First Prince-Elector of Hanover: Ernest Augustus, Consort of Sophia, daughter of the Princess Palatine, Elizabeth Stuart, Queen of Bohemia, granddaughter of James I of England, and great-granddaughter of Mary Stuart, Queen of Scots.

In the year 1697 the head of the House of Guelph was invested with the title of Duke of Saxe-Lauenburg.

January 23, 1698:—Death of Ernest Augustus. Succeeded by his son, George Louis, who dropped the last given name when he became King of

Great Britain and Ireland in addition to Elector of Hanover.

1700:—Death of the Duke of Gloucester, last surviving son of Queen Anne of Great Britain and Ireland.

March 22, 1701:—The British Parliament declared the Electress Sophia next in succession, and her son George was created Duke of Cambridge, the "Act of Settlement," so called, stipulating that the heirs of the Electress Sophia must be Protestants.

May 28, 1714:—Death of Electress Sophia.

August 1, 1714:—Death of Queen Anne.

August 1, 1714:—George Louis of Hanover succeeded to the English throne by virtue of the Act of Settlement, and in default of issue from Anne and William. Took the name of George I. He was married to Sophia Dorothea of Celle.

King George brought no Queen to England, as, on December 28, 1694, he had divorced his wife, Sophia Dorothea, heiress of Duke George William of Celle and Eleonore d'Olbreuze.

When hereditary Princess of Hanover, Sophia Dorothea became the mother of a Prince (afterward King George II), and a daughter named after her (later wife of Frederick William I of Prussia). In 1694 she was accused of holding illicit relations with Count Philip of Koenigsmarck, "than whom a greater scamp does not walk the history of the seventeenth century," and Koenigsmarck was murdered outside of Sophia Dorothea's apartments at the Hanover Palace by order of her husband and father-in-law, on July 1st of that

year. After the divorce, Sophia Dorothea was banished to the castle of Ahlden and became known as Princess of Ahlden. There she was kept a prisoner of state until her death, November 23, 1726.

September 27, 1714:—The only son of King George I proclaimed Prince of Wales. He was married to Wilhelmina Charlotte Caroline of Ansbach.

June 11, 1727:—Succession of George II—the Princess of Ahlden's son—as King of Great Britain and Ireland.

April 27, 1746:—Battle of Culloden, making an end of the Jacobites under the "Young Pretender."

October 25, 1760:—The grandson of George II mounted the throne as George III. His father was the late Prince Frederick Louis of Wales, married to Augusta of Saxe-Coburg. He was the first Guelph King of Great Britain and Ireland born in England (June 4, 1738). Charlotte Sophia of Mecklenburg was his wife. Under George III England acquired Canada from France and Florida from Spain, and lost the American colonies during the war begun in 1775 and concluded by the peace of Versailles, September 3, 1783.

Up to 1811, George III had several temporary attacks of mental derangement; he became hopelessly insane in that year. He is the author of the infamous Royal Marriage Act, known as "12 George III C. II," which practically sanctions bigamy in the royal house of Great Britain. He

was probably insane when he conceived this state paper and forced its passage.

January 29, 1820:—Succession to the Crown of George IV, regent since 1811. He was the oldest son of George III.

December 21, 1785:—Marriage of the above to Mrs. Fitzherbert.

April 8, 1795:—Marriage of the above to Caroline of Brunswick, without divorce from Mrs. Fitzherbert; but he refused to allow his plural wife, known as Queen Caroline, to be crowned.

June 6, 1820:—George IV instituted divorce proceedings against Caroline in the House of Lords, charging infidelity, but the suit was abandoned for want of evidence.

June 26, 1830:—Succession of William IV, brother of George IV, born at Windsor, August 31, 1765. His marriage to Adelaide of Meiningen was without issue.

June 20, 1837:—Succession of Victoria, Queen of Great Britain, the first Empress of India. She was the daughter of the Duke of Kent, a son of George III and a Coburg Princess. Victoria was born May 24, 1819, and on February 10, 1840, married Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg. She had issue as follows:

Princess Victoria, afterward Empress Frederick of Germany; Albert Edward, Prince of Wales; Princess Alice, afterward Grand Duchess of Hesse (deceased); Prince Alfred, died as Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha; Princess Helen, afterward Princess Christian (deceased); Prince Arthur, created Duke of Connaught; Prince Leo-

pold, created Duke of Albany (deceased); Princess Beatrice, widow of Prince Henry of Battenberg.

In March, 1860, the Prince of Wales, afterward King Edward, married a noble Irish lady at Kingstown, Ireland.

January 8, 1861:—Issue of the above marriage born at Windsor Castle, named John, Prince de Guelph.

March 10, 1863:—The Prince of Wales contracted another marriage, without the first being dissolved, with Princess Alexandra, daughter of the heir-presumptive of Denmark, Prince Christian, afterward King Christian IX.

Issue of this second marriage: Albert Victor, created Duke of Clarence and Avondale (deceased); George, Prince of Wales, now George V (uncrowned); Louise, Duchess of Fife; Princess Maud, now Queen of Norway.

Status of the Queen of King George V:

Mary, the Queen of George V, *de facto* King of Great Britain and Ireland, is the oldest daughter of the late Princess Mary of Cambridge, first cousin to Queen Victoria and her husband, a member of the lower German nobility.

Queen Mary's father is the issue of Duke Alexander of Wurtemberg and his morganatic wife, Claudine, Countess Rhedy, subsequently created Countess Hohenstein, but never recognized by any of the Continental courts. The King of Wurtemberg named him Teck, after a ruined castle on the Danube, and threw in the title of Prince when the boy became of age.

After Prince Francis had been married to Princess Mary five years, the Wurtemberg King created him Duke of Teck, and conferred the title of Prince and Princess on his issue. The Teck Ducal title was never recognized by any of the Continental courts except that of Stuttgart.

14 DAY USE
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED
LOAN DEPT.
RENEWALS ONLY—TEL. NO. 642-3405
This book is due on the last date stamped below, or
on the date to which renewed.
Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

AUG 22 1969 7 3 REC'D LD	AUG 21 '69 -10 AM

LD21A-60m-6,'69
(J9096s10)476-A-32

General Library
University of California
Berkeley

YC 28643

509912

DA568
G7A2

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY